



## Final results of Borexino Phase-I on low-energy solar neutrino spectroscopy

G. Bellini, J. Benziger, D. Bick, G. Bonfini, D. Bravo, M. Buizza Avanzini, B. Caccianiga, L. Cadonati, F. Calaprice, P. Cavalcante, et al.

### ► To cite this version:

G. Bellini, J. Benziger, D. Bick, G. Bonfini, D. Bravo, et al.. Final results of Borexino Phase-I on low-energy solar neutrino spectroscopy. *Physical Review D*, 2014, 89 (11), 10.1103/PhysRevD.89.112007 . hal-02553229

**HAL Id: hal-02553229**

**<https://hal.science/hal-02553229>**

Submitted on 21 Jan 2022

**HAL** is a multi-disciplinary open access archive for the deposit and dissemination of scientific research documents, whether they are published or not. The documents may come from teaching and research institutions in France or abroad, or from public or private research centers.

L'archive ouverte pluridisciplinaire **HAL**, est destinée au dépôt et à la diffusion de documents scientifiques de niveau recherche, publiés ou non, émanant des établissements d'enseignement et de recherche français ou étrangers, des laboratoires publics ou privés.

# Final results of Borexino Phase-I on low-energy solar-neutrino spectroscopy

G. Bellini,<sup>1</sup> J. Benziger,<sup>2</sup> D. Bick,<sup>3</sup> G. Bonfini,<sup>4</sup> D. Bravo,<sup>5</sup> M. Buizza Avanzini,<sup>1</sup> B. Caccianiga,<sup>1</sup> L. Cadonati,<sup>6</sup> F. Calaprice,<sup>2</sup> P. Cavalcante,<sup>4</sup> A. Chavarria,<sup>2</sup> A. Chepurnov,<sup>7</sup> D. D'Angelo,<sup>1</sup> S. Davini,<sup>8</sup> A. Derbin,<sup>9</sup> A. Empl,<sup>8</sup> A. Etenko,<sup>10</sup> K. Fomenko,<sup>11,4</sup> D. Franco,<sup>12</sup> F. Gabriele,<sup>4</sup> C. Galbiati,<sup>2</sup> S. Gazzana,<sup>4</sup> C. Ghiano,<sup>12</sup> M. Giammarchi,<sup>1</sup> M. Göger-Neff,<sup>13</sup> A. Goretti,<sup>2</sup> L. Grandi,<sup>2</sup> M. Gromov,<sup>7</sup> C. Hagner,<sup>3</sup> E. Hungerford,<sup>8</sup> Aldo Ianni,<sup>4</sup> Andrea Ianni,<sup>2</sup> V. Kobychiev,<sup>14</sup> D. Korablev,<sup>11</sup> G. Korga,<sup>8</sup> D. Kryn,<sup>12</sup> M. Laubenstein,<sup>4</sup> T. Lewke,<sup>13</sup> E. Litvinovich,<sup>10,15</sup> B. Loer,<sup>2</sup> F. Lombardi,<sup>4</sup> P. Lombardi,<sup>1</sup> L. Ludhova,<sup>1</sup> G. Lukyanchenko,<sup>10</sup> I. Machulin,<sup>10,15</sup> S. Manecki,<sup>5</sup> W. Maneschg,<sup>16</sup> G. Manuzio,<sup>17</sup> Q. Meindl,<sup>13</sup> E. Meroni,<sup>1</sup> L. Miramonti,<sup>1</sup> M. Misiaszek,<sup>18</sup> P. Mosteiro,<sup>2</sup> V. Muratova,<sup>9</sup> L. Oberauer,<sup>13</sup> M. Obolensky,<sup>12</sup> F. Ortica,<sup>19</sup> K. Otis,<sup>6</sup> M. Pallavicini,<sup>17</sup> L. Papp,<sup>5</sup> C. Pena-Garay,<sup>20</sup> L. Perasso,<sup>17</sup> S. Perasso,<sup>17</sup> A. Pocar,<sup>6</sup> G. Ranucci,<sup>1</sup> A. Razeto,<sup>4</sup> A. Re,<sup>1</sup> A. Romani,<sup>19</sup> N. Rossi,<sup>21</sup> R. Saldanha,<sup>2</sup> C. Salvo,<sup>17</sup> S. Schönert,<sup>13</sup> H. Simgen,<sup>16</sup> M. Skorokhvatov,<sup>10,15</sup> O. Smirnov,<sup>11</sup> A. Sotnikov,<sup>11</sup> S. Sukhotin,<sup>10</sup> Y. Suvorov,<sup>21,10</sup> R. Tartaglia,<sup>21</sup> G. Testera,<sup>17</sup> D. Vignaud,<sup>12</sup> R.B. Vogelaar,<sup>5</sup> F. von Feilitzsch,<sup>13</sup> J. Winter,<sup>13</sup> M. Wojcik,<sup>18</sup> A. Wright,<sup>2</sup> M. Wurm,<sup>3</sup> J. Xu,<sup>2</sup> O. Zaimidoroga,<sup>11</sup> S. Zavatarelli,<sup>17</sup> and G. Zuzel<sup>18</sup>

(Borexino Collaboration)

<sup>1</sup>*Dipartimento di Fisica, Università degli Studi e INFN, Milano 20133, Italy*

<sup>2</sup>*Physics Department, Princeton University, Princeton, NJ 08544, USA*

<sup>3</sup>*Institut für Experimentalphysik, Universität Hamburg, Germany*

<sup>4</sup>*INFN Laboratori Nazionali del Gran Sasso, Assergi 67010, Italy*

<sup>5</sup>*Physics Department, Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University, Blacksburg, VA 24061, USA*

<sup>6</sup>*Physics Department, University of Massachusetts, Amherst MA 01003, USA*

<sup>7</sup>*Lomonosov Moscow State University Skobeltsyn Institute of Nuclear Physics, Moscow 119234, Russia*

<sup>8</sup>*Department of Physics, University of Houston, Houston, TX 77204, USA*

<sup>9</sup>*St. Petersburg Nuclear Physics Institute, Gatchina 188350, Russia*

<sup>10</sup>*NRC Kurchatov Institute, Moscow 123182, Russia*

<sup>11</sup>*Joint Institute for Nuclear Research, Dubna 141980, Russia*

<sup>12</sup>*APC, Univ. Paris Diderot, CNRS/IN2P3, CEA/Irfu, Obs. de Paris, Sorbonne Paris Cité, France*

<sup>13</sup>*Physik Department, Technische Universität München, Garching 85747, Germany*

<sup>14</sup>*Kiev Institute for Nuclear Research, Kiev 06380, Ukraine*

<sup>15</sup>*National Nuclear Research University "MEPhI", 31 Kashirskoe Shosse, Moscow, Russia*

<sup>16</sup>*Max-Planck-Institut für Kernphysik, Saupfercheckweg 1, 69117 Heidelberg, Germany*

<sup>17</sup>*Dipartimento di Fisica, Università e INFN, Genova 16146, Italy*

<sup>18</sup>*M. Smoluchowski Institute of Physics, Jagiellonian University, Cracow, 30059, Poland*

<sup>19</sup>*Dipartimento di Chimica, Biologia e Biotecnologie, Università e INFN, Perugia 06123, Italy*

<sup>20</sup>*Istituto de Física Corpuscular, Valencia, E-46071, Spain*

<sup>21</sup>*Physics and Astronomy Department, University of California Los Angeles (UCLA), Los Angeles, CA 90095, USA*

Borexino has been running since May 2007 at the LNGS laboratory in Italy with the primary goal of detecting solar neutrinos. The detector, a large, unsegmented liquid scintillator calorimeter characterized by unprecedented low levels of intrinsic radioactivity, is optimized for the study of the lower energy part of the spectrum. During the Phase-I (2007 - 2010), Borexino first detected and then precisely measured the flux of the <sup>7</sup>Be solar neutrinos, ruled out any significant day–night asymmetry of their interaction rate, made the first direct observation of the *pep* neutrinos, and set the tightest upper limit on the flux of CNO solar neutrinos. In this paper we discuss the signal signature and provide a comprehensive description of the backgrounds, quantify their event rates, describe the methods for their identification, selection or subtraction, and describe data analysis. Key features are an extensive in situ calibration program using radioactive sources, the detailed modeling of the detector response, the ability to define an innermost fiducial volume with extremely low background via software cuts, and the excellent pulse–shape discrimination capability of the scintillator that allows particle identification. We report a measurement of the annual modulation of the <sup>7</sup>Be neutrino interaction rate. The period, the amplitude, and the phase of the observed modulation are consistent with the solar origin of these events, and the absence of their annual modulation is rejected with higher than 99% C.L. The physics implications of Phase-I results in the context of the neutrino oscillation physics and solar models are presented.

PACS numbers: 13.35.Hb, 14.60.St, 26.65.+t, 95.55.Vj, 29.40.Mc

## CONTENTS

I. Introduction	2	II. The Borexino detector	4
		II.1. Inner–Vessel leak	5
		III. Solar neutrinos detection in Borexino	5

IV. The data set	6	XX. Fit of the energy spectra	44
V. The analysis methods	6	XXI. Multivariate Fit	45
VI. Electronics and triggers	7	XXII. The ${}^7\text{Be}$ -neutrino interaction rate	46
VII. Scintillator properties	10	XXIII. Search for a day-night asymmetry in the ${}^7\text{Be}$ -neutrino interaction rate	49
VIII. The calibration with radioactive sources	11	XXIV. Annual modulation of the ${}^7\text{Be}$ -neutrino interaction rate	51
IX. Energy reconstruction	12	XXIV.1. Analysis approach	51
X. Position reconstruction	13	XXIV.2. Event selection	52
XI. Backgrounds and choice of fiducial volume	14	XXIV.3. Background and detector-response stability	53
XI.1. External and surface background	15	XXIV.4. Results	54
XI.2. Fiducial volume in different analyses	16	Fit of the rate versus time	54
XI.2.1. Dynamical reconstruction of the vessel shape	17	Results with the Lomb-Scargle method	54
XI.3. Internal background	17	Results with the EMD method	55
XI.3.1. ${}^{14}\text{C}$	18	XXV. The <i>pep</i> and CNO neutrino interaction rates	57
XI.3.2. ${}^{85}\text{Kr}$	20	XXVI. Neutrino oscillation analysis with the Borexino results	60
XI.3.3. ${}^{40}\text{K}$	20	XXVI.1. Analysis of the Borexino data	63
XI.3.4. ${}^{39}\text{Ar}$	21	XXVI.2. Combined analysis of solar neutrino experiments results	65
XI.3.5. ${}^{238}\text{U}$ chain and ${}^{222}\text{Rn}$	21	XXVI.3. Combined analysis of solar plus KamLAND experimental results	65
XI.3.6. ${}^{210}\text{Pb}$	22	XXVI.4. The solar metallicity controversy	65
XI.3.7. ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$	22	XXVII. The neutrino survival probability	67
XI.3.8. ${}^{210}\text{Po}$	23	XXVIII. Conclusions and perspectives	68
XI.3.9. ${}^{232}\text{Th}$ chain	23	References	68
XI.4. Cosmic muons and cosmogenic background	24		
XII. Shape variables and event quality estimators	25		
XIII. The event selection and cut efficiency	28		
XIII.1. Event selection	28		
XIII.2. Cut efficiency	30		
XIII.3. Event-by-event based $\alpha - \beta$ cut	31		
XIV. $\alpha - \beta$ statistical subtraction	32		
XV. ${}^{11}\text{C}$ suppression	33		
XV.1. Three-fold coincidence veto	33		
XV.2. $\beta^+/\beta^-$ pulse-shape discrimination	34		
XV.3. Boosted Decision Tree	35		
XVI. The energy response function	36		
XVII. The analytical procedure	37		
XVII.1. The quenching factor and $kB$	37		
XVII.2. $N_{pe}$ and $N_{pe}^d$ estimators	38		
XVII.3. $N_{pe}$ response function	39		
XVII.4. $N_{pe}^d$ response function	39		
XVII.5. $N_p$ estimator	40		
XVIII. The Monte Carlo procedure	40		
XIX. The $\alpha$ energy scale	43		

## I. INTRODUCTION

The study of neutrinos emitted by the Sun with energies below  $\sim 3000$  keV (low-energy solar neutrinos) is a science at the intersection of elementary particle physics and astrophysics: on one hand these neutrinos allow for the study of neutrino oscillations, and on the other they provide key information for accurate solar modeling.

The spectrum of electron neutrinos ( $\nu_e$ ) generated in the core of the Sun is shown in Fig. 1. The spectral shapes are taken from [1] while the flux normalisation from [2].

Borexino is presently the only detector able to measure the solar-neutrino interaction rate down to energies as low as  $\sim 150$  keV and to reconstruct the energy spectrum of the events. Previous radiochemical experiments, with an energy threshold of 233 keV, could not extract information about the neutrino energy spectrum [3], [4]. In particular, Borexino is the only experiment to date to have measured the interaction rate of the  ${}^7\text{Be}$  862 keV

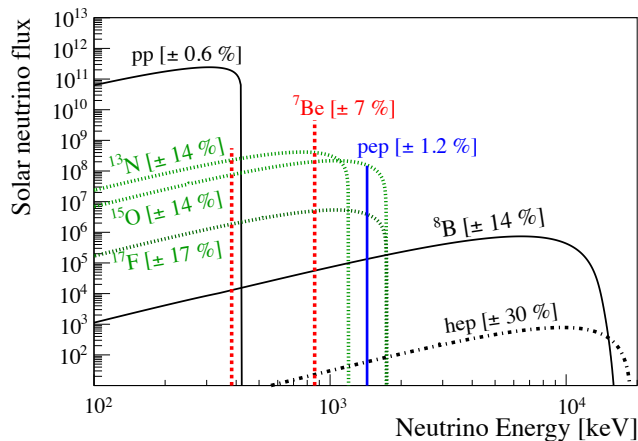


FIG. 1. Energy spectrum of solar neutrinos. The spectral shapes are taken from [1] while the flux normalisation from [2]. The vertical axis report the flux in  $\text{cm}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1} (10^3 \text{ keV})^{-1}$  for the continuous neutrino spectra, while in  $\text{cm}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$  for the mono-chromatic lines ( ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  at 384 and 862 keV, shown as red dotted lines, and  $\text{pep}-\nu$  at 1440 keV, shown as a blue continuous line). The numbers in parenthesis represent the theoretical uncertainties on the expected fluxes.

solar neutrinos [5], [6]. The accuracy of the measurement has recently reached 5% [7], and any significant day–night asymmetry of the  ${}^7\text{Be}$  solar neutrino flux has been excluded [8]. Borexino has also made the first direct observation of the mono-energetic 1440 keV  $\text{pep}$  solar neutrinos [9], and set the strongest upper limit of the CNO solar neutrinos flux to date. Furthermore, the experiment has measured the  ${}^8\text{B}$  solar neutrinos with an energy threshold of 3000 keV [10], lower than that achieved by previous experiments.

Lepton-flavor changing neutrino oscillations have been detected by several experiments covering a wide range of source-to-detector distances and neutrino energies. Numerous experiments, measuring atmospheric and solar neutrinos or using neutrino and antineutrino beams from nuclear reactors and accelerators, contribute to our current understanding of neutrino oscillations [11], [12], the phenomenological description of which involves the square of the neutrino mass differences  $\Delta m_{ij}^2$  ( $i$  and  $j$  label mass eigenstates) and their mixing angles  $\theta_{ij}$ . Indeed, solar  $\nu_e$ 's are a very sensitive probe for oscillations. Because they oscillate, they reach the Earth as a mixture of  $\nu_e$ ,  $\nu_\mu$ , and  $\nu_\tau$ . One of the mixing angles,  $\theta_{13}$ , is small and then only two parameters ( $\Delta m_{12}^2$  and  $\theta_{12}$ ) are sufficient to describe well the main features of solar neutrino oscillations.

Neutrino interactions with the electrons inside the Sun play an important role in the oscillation dynamics of solar neutrinos, via the MSW effect [13]. Additionally, depending on the allowed region of the oscillation parameters and neutrino energy, neutrino interactions with the Earth electrons may induce a regeneration effect of the disappeared  $\nu_e$ . The result could be a different flux

of neutrinos reaching the detector during the night time (when neutrinos cross the Earth during their path from the Sun to the detector) and during the day (when neutrinos do not cross the Earth) [14]. This effect was studied already for  ${}^8\text{B}$  solar neutrinos [11] and it has recently detected with a statistical significance of  $2.7 \sigma$  [15] for that solar neutrino component. Borexino has provided a measurement for the lower energy  ${}^7\text{Be}$  solar neutrinos.

The currently measured solar neutrino oscillation parameters [16] are  $\Delta m_{12}^2 = (7.54^{+0.26}_{-0.22}) \times 10^{-5} \text{ eV}^2$  and  $\sin^2 \theta_{12} = 0.307^{+0.018}_{-0.016}$ , also known as the MSW–LMA (large mixing angle) [13] solution. These values have been obtained in a global 3 lepton flavor analysis of all available neutrino data, including the recent discovery of non-zero value of  $\theta_{13}$  mixing angle [17]. The current best value of  $\sin^2 \theta_{13}$  is  $0.0241 \pm 0.0025$ , taken as well from [16].

The MSW–LMA model predicts an energy dependent survival probability  $P_{ee}$  of electron neutrinos with two oscillation regimes, in vacuum and in matter, and a transition region in between. Non-standard neutrino interaction models [18] predict  $P_{ee}$  curves that deviate significantly from the MSW–LMA, particularly between 1000 and 4000 keV. Low-energy solar neutrinos are thus a sensitive tool to test the MSW–LMA paradigm by measuring  $P_{ee}$  versus neutrino energy.

The Standard Solar Model (SSM) identifies two distinct nuclear fusion processes occurring in our star. One is the dominant  $pp$  fusion chain and the other the sub-dominant CNO cycle [2], [19]. Together, they yield the neutrino fluxes as in Fig. 1. A measurement of solar neutrinos from the CNO cycle has important implications in solar physics and astrophysics more generally, as this is believed to be the primary process fueling massive stars ( $>1.5 M_{\text{Sun}}$ ). The CNO solar neutrino flux is sensitive to the abundance of heavy elements in the Sun (metallicity), an experimental input parameter in solar models. The CNO flux is 40% higher in high-metallicity models [2] than it is in low-metallicity ones [19]. A precise CNO solar neutrino flux measurement has therefore the potential to discriminate between these competing models and to shed light on the inner workings of heavy stars.

This paper provides a detailed description of the analysis methods used to obtain the aforementioned measurements of  ${}^7\text{Be}$ ,  $\text{pep}$ , and CNO (upper limit) solar neutrino interaction rates in Borexino. After a brief description of the detector, we discuss the expected neutrino signal, the backgrounds, the variables used in the analysis, and the procedures adopted to extract the signal. We then report on a measurement of the annual modulation of the  ${}^7\text{Be}$  solar neutrino rate. Finally, we discuss the physics implications of the Borexino solar neutrino results and we report a global analysis of the Borexino data combined with that of other solar neutrino experiments and of reactor experiments sensitive to  $\Delta m_{12}^2$  and  $\theta_{12}$ .

This paper reports the final results of the Borexino Phase-I. Phase-II, with an even better radio-purity already obtained after an extensive purification campaign of the scintillator, has already started data taking in

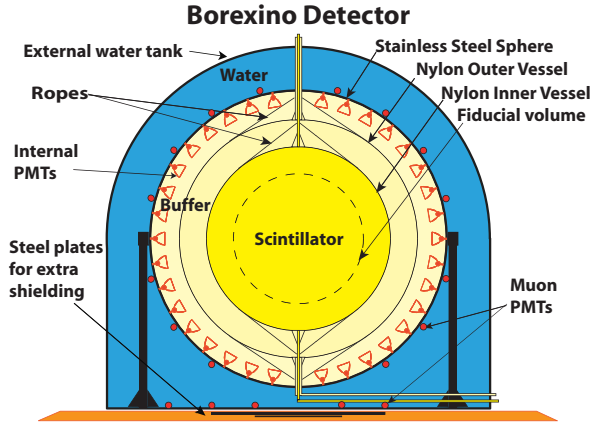


FIG. 2. The schematic view of the Borexino detector.

2012 and will continue for several years. The goals of the Phase-II will be reported in a separate paper.

## II. THE BOREXINO DETECTOR

Borexino is installed in Hall C of the Laboratori Nazionali del Gran Sasso (LNGS) in Italy. Its design [20] is based on the principle of graded shielding, with the inner scintillating core at the center of a set of concentric shells of decreasing radio-purity from inside to outside (see Fig. 2). The active medium is a solution of PPO (2,5-diphenyloxazole, a fluorescent dye) in pseudocumene (PC, 1,2,4-trimethylbenzene) at a concentration of 1.5 g/l [21]. The scintillator mass ( $\sim 278$  ton) is contained in a 125  $\mu\text{m}$  thick spherical nylon Inner Vessel (IV) [24] with 4.25 m radius surrounded by 2212 photomultipliers (PMTs) labeled as Internal PMTs in Fig. 2. All but 371 PMTs are equipped with aluminum light concentrators designed to increase the light collection efficiency.

Within the IV a fiducial volume (FV) is software defined through the measured event position, obtained from the PMTs timing data via a time-of-flight algorithm (see Section X). A second 5.5 m radius nylon Outer Vessel (OV) surrounds the IV, acting as a barrier against radon and other background contamination originating from outside. The region between the IV and the OV contains a passive shield composed of PC and a small quantity of DMP (dimethylphthalate), a material that quenches the residual scintillation of PC so that scintillation signals arise dominantly from the interior of the IV [21]. The concentration of DMP in PC was 5.0 g/l at the beginning of data taking and was later reduced to 3.0 g/l (and then to 2.0 g/l) to mitigate the effects of a small leak in the IV (discussed in Subsection II.1). A 6.85 m radius Stainless Steel Sphere (SSS) encloses the central part of the detector and serves also as a support structure for the 2212 8" (ETL 9351) PMTs.

The region between the OV and the SSS is filled with the same inert buffer fluid (PC plus DMP) which is layered between the IV and the OV. The apparatus consisting of the PC and its solvents, the nylon vessels and the Internal PMTs is called Inner Detector (ID).

The ID is contained in a tank (9 m base radius, 16.9 m height) filled by ultra-pure water. The total liquid passive shielding of the central volume from external radiation (such as that originating from the rock) is thus 5.5 m of water equivalent. The water tank (WT) serves also as an active veto (Outer Detector OD) allowing the detection of the Cherenkov light induced by muons in water. For this purpose 208 PMTs are installed on the external side of the SSS and on the WT walls. The walls of the water tank are covered by a reflective material to enhance the light collection. Details of the OD are described in [25].

All the materials of the detector internal components (stainless steel, phototubes, cables, light concentrators, nylon) were specially selected for extremely low radioactivity. Furthermore, only qualified ultra-clean processes were employed for their realization, followed by careful surface cleaning methods.

The final assembly of the elements in the SSS was carried out in clean room conditions: the entire interior of the sphere was converted into a class 1000 clean room, while in front of the main entrance of the sphere itself an on purpose clean room of class 100 - 1000 was used for all the final cleaning procedures of the equipment. Key elements determining the success of the experiment were also the many liquid purification and handling systems [26], which were designed and installed to ensure the proper fluid manipulation at the exceptional purity level demanded by Borexino.

The PC was specially produced for Borexino by Polimeri Europa (Sarroch-IT), according to a stringent quality control plan jointly developed. It was shipped to LNGS through custom-built transport tanks especially cleaned and treated. The first underground operation was the PC transfer via a dedicated unloading station to four big reservoir tanks. Taken from this storage area, the PC was first purified via distillation, then either mixed with PPO for insertion in the IV or mixed with DMP for the insertion in the buffer region. Furthermore, the PPO was pre-mixed with a limited quantity of PC in a dedicated PPO system, originating a concentrated PPO solution which was then mixed in line with the PC.

Other important ancillary plants are the  $\text{N}_2$  systems, which deliver regular, or on site purified, or specially produced  $\text{N}_2$ . The last one has exceptionally low content of  $^{39}\text{Ar}$  and  $^{85}\text{Kr}$ , to be used for the crucial manipulations of the liquid in the IV. Finally, an ultra-pure water system was used to produce the water for the cleaning operations, for the WT fill, and for the preliminary water fill of the SSS.

The selection of the low radioactivity materials, the liquid handling procedures, the purification strategies, and many scintillator properties have been tested using a prototype of Borexino called Counting Test Facil-

ity (CTF). This detector ( $\simeq 5\text{ m}^3$  vessel filled by an organic liquid scintillator viewed by 100 PMTs) collected data from the year 1995 until the year 2011 in Hall C of the Laboratori Nazionali del Gran Sasso in Italy. The CTF data have allowed to understand the relevant background expected in Borexino, to setup the correct purification procedure, to select the most suitable scintillator mixture, and to fully demonstrate the feasibility of Borexino itself. Relevant CTF results are reported in [27],[28],[29],[30],[31],[32],[33].

### II.1. Inner-Vessel leak

A leak of scintillator from the IV to the buffer region within the OV started approximately on April 9<sup>th</sup> 2008, for reasons which we could not exactly determine.

The small hole in the IV was reconstructed to have location as  $26^\circ < \theta < 37^\circ$  and  $225^\circ < \phi < 270^\circ$ . This leak was detected only in September 2008 based on a large rate of events reconstructed out of the IV. Its presence was then confirmed by abnormally high PPO concentration in the samples of OV-buffer.

The IV shape and volume can be reconstructed based on the inner-detector pictures taken with the seven CCD cameras [34]. By this technique, the leak rate was estimated to be about  $1.33\text{ m}^3/\text{month}$ . In order to minimize the leak rate, the density difference between the scintillator and the buffer fluids, and hence the pressure difference across the leak, was reduced by partial removal of DMP from the buffer by distillation. Between February 12<sup>th</sup>, 2009 and April 3<sup>rd</sup>, 2009 the buffer liquid was purified and the DMP concentration reduced from 5 g/l to 3 g/l, thus reducing the density difference between the scintillator and the buffer and in turn the buoyant forces on the IV. This reduced the leak rate to about  $0.56\text{ m}^3/\text{month}$ , and greatly reduced the number of scintillation events occurring in the buffer. In December 2009 it was decided to further reduce the DMP concentration to 2 g/l, to approach neutral buoyancy between buffer and scintillator. This concentration is still high enough to suppress the PC scintillation in the buffer. Following this operation, concluded at the end of January 2010, the leak rate was further reduced to  $\sim 1.5\text{ m}^3/\text{year}$ . The IV shape appeared to be stabilized. The lost scintillator volume in the IV was compensated by several refilling operations using PC.

## III. SOLAR NEUTRINOS DETECTION IN BOREXINO

Solar neutrinos of all flavors are detected by means of their elastic scattering off electrons:

$$\nu_{e,\mu,\tau} + e^- \rightarrow \nu_{e,\mu,\tau} + e^-. \quad (1)$$

In the elastic scattering process only a fraction of the neutrino energy  $E_\nu$  is transferred to an electron and the interaction of the latter with the medium originates the

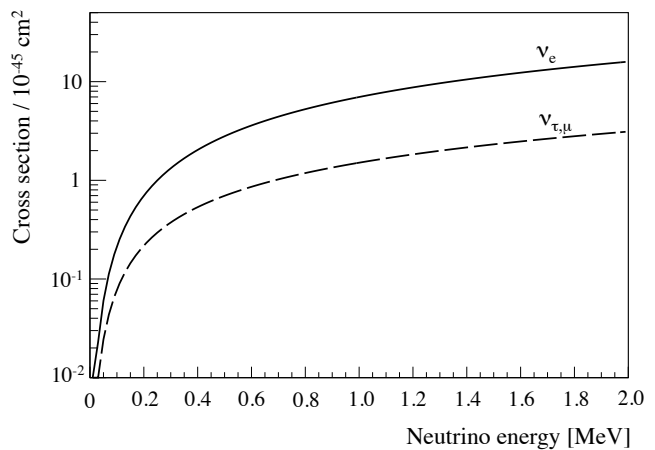


FIG. 3. Neutrino – electron elastic scattering cross section as a function of the neutrino energy for  $\nu_e$  (solid line) and for  $\nu_\mu$  or  $\nu_\tau$  (dashed line).

scintillation signal. The electron recoil spectrum is thus continuous even in the case of mono-energetic neutrinos and it extends up to a maximum energy  $T^{max}$  given by

$$T^{max} = \frac{E_\nu}{1 + \frac{m_e c^2}{2E_\nu}}, \quad (2)$$

where  $m_e c^2$  is the electron rest energy. For the mono-energetic 862 keV  $^7\text{Be}$  and 1440 keV  $pep$  solar neutrinos,  $T^{max}$  is 665 keV and 1220 keV, respectively.

The rate of  $\nu_{e,\mu,\tau}$  – electron elastic scattering interactions in a given target is a product of the incoming neutrino flux, the number of electrons in the target  $N_e$  (in Borexino  $(3.307 \pm 0.003) \times 10^{31} e^-/100\text{ ton}$ ), and the neutrino-electron elastic scattering cross section. The cross sections  $\sigma_e$  and  $\sigma_{\mu,\tau}$  are obtained from the electroweak Standard Model (SM). Radiative corrections to the total cross sections for solar- $\nu s$  elastic scattering and thus to the electron-recoil energy spectra are described in [35]. Table I shows the total cross sections for solar neutrinos (weighted for the spectral shape in case of continuous energy spectra) calculated following the procedure of [35] with updated values for numerical constants according to [36] and with the constant term of (A4) from [35] equal to 0.9786 according to [37]. The radiative corrections change monotonically the electron recoil spectrum for incident  $^8\text{B}$  solar neutrinos, with the relative probability of observing recoil electrons being reduced by about 4% at the highest electron energies. For  $pep$  and  $^7\text{Be}$  solar neutrinos, the recoil spectra are not affected significantly.

Borexino can detect neutrinos of all flavors, but  $\nu_e$  have a larger cross section than  $\nu_\mu$  and  $\nu_\tau$ , because  $\nu_e$  interact through both charged current (CC) and neutral current (NC), while  $\nu_\mu$  and  $\nu_\tau$  interact only via the NC. Figure 3 shows the total cross section for neutrino electron elastic scattering as a function of neutrino energy. The interaction probability increases with energy and it is about 4-5 times larger for  $\nu_e$  than for  $\nu_\mu, \nu_\tau$  in the energy region of

our interest. Electron recoils induced by different neutrino flavors cannot be distinguished event-by-event. In principle, the different recoil energy spectra between  $\nu_e$  and  $\nu_\mu, \nu_\tau$  might allow a statistical separation, but this is practically not possible with the current amount of data.

Considering solar neutrino oscillations, the expected neutrino interaction rate in Borexino  $R_\nu$  is:

$$R_\nu = N_e \Phi_\nu \int dE_\nu \frac{d\lambda}{dE_\nu} \int \left\{ \frac{d\sigma_e(E_\nu, T)}{dT} P_{ee}(E_\nu) + \frac{d\sigma_\mu(E_\nu, T)}{dT} [1 - P_{ee}(E_\nu)] \right\} dT, \quad (3)$$

where  $N_e$  is the number of target electrons,  $\Phi_\nu$  is the SSM solar neutrino flux,  $d\lambda/dE_\nu$  is the differential energy spectrum of solar neutrinos, and  $P_{ee}$  is the electron neutrino survival probability defined in [39]. Table II reports the expected interaction rates of solar neutrinos in Borexino according to the high-metallicity [2] and the low-metallicity [19] hypothesis of the Standard Solar Model, using the oscillation parameters from [16]. The spectral shapes  $d\lambda/dE_\nu$  are taken from [1] with the exception of  $^8\text{B}-\nu$  taken from [38]. The low count rate between a few and a few tens of counts-per-day (cpd)/100 ton defines the required background rates and the needed radio-purity of the detector.

#### IV. THE DATA SET

Borexino is collecting data in its final configuration since May 16<sup>th</sup>, 2007. For the precision measurement of the interaction rate of the  $^7\text{Be}$  neutrinos [7] we have used all the available data until May 8<sup>th</sup>, 2010. The live-time after the analysis cuts is 740.7 days which corresponds to the 153.6 ton  $\times$  year fiducial exposure. For the measurement of the interaction rate of the *pep* and CNO neutrinos [9] we have used the data collected from January 13<sup>th</sup>, 2008 to May 9<sup>th</sup>, 2010. The total live-time after the cuts but before the subtraction of the background signal due to the cosmogenic  $^{11}\text{C}$  (see Section XV) is 598.3 days. The final spectrum obtained after the  $^{11}\text{C}$  subtraction corresponds to 55.9 ton  $\times$  year and it preserves 48.5% of the total exposure.

The data have been collected almost continuously over time with some interruptions due to maintenance or calibrations with radioactive sources described in Section VIII and in [34]. The data taking is organized in periods called "runs" with a typical duration of few hours.

#### V. THE ANALYSIS METHODS

The emission of scintillation light is isotropic and any information about the initial direction of solar neutrinos is lost. This is a weak point compared to Cherenkov detectors, which can measure the incoming neutrino direc-

tion and have been widely employed to study the high-energy part of the solar-neutrinos spectrum [40]. However, the light yield of Cherenkov emitters is too small (about 50 times smaller than the scintillation one) to allow their use for detecting the low-energy part of the solar-neutrinos spectrum, so liquid scintillators are the only practical possibility for real-time detection.

Neutrino-induced events in liquid scintillator are thus intrinsically indistinguishable on an event-by-event basis from the background due to  $\beta$  or  $\gamma$  decays. The analysis procedure begins removing from the available data single events due to taggable background (radioactive decays from delayed coincidences, muons and events following muons within a given time window) or due to electronics noise. The set of these event-by-event based cuts (standard cuts) is described in Section XIII. Additional background components can be eventually suppressed by removing all the events detected within a given volume during a proper time window: this is the case of the cosmogenic  $^{11}\text{C}$  suppression (see Section XV) applied in the *pep* and CNO neutrino analysis.

In general, the majority of the background types cannot be eliminated by these methods. The analysis procedure continues by building the distributions of the quantities of interest (energy estimators, radial position of events, particular shape parameters built to distinguish between signal and background) and fitting them by means of analytical models or Monte Carlo (MC) spectra to extract the contribution of the signal and background. When possible, some background is removed from these distributions by applying statistical subtraction techniques based on the particle pulse-shape identification. The ability to define a fiducial volume through the reconstruction of the position of the scintillation events is a crucial feature made possible by the fast time response of the scintillator and of the PMTs: this handle allows to strongly suppress any external background. For the  $^7\text{Be}$ -neutrino analysis we fit only the energy spectrum of the events surviving the standard cuts with and without the application of a statistical subtraction procedure aiming to remove background due to the  $\alpha$  decay of  $^{210}\text{Po}$ . For the *pep* and CNO neutrino analysis we developed a multivariate likelihood fit including distributions of the energy estimator, the radial position, and the shape parameter able to separate scintillation induced by the  $\beta^+$  decay of  $^{11}\text{C}$  from the scintillation due to electrons.

The results achieved by Borexino have been made possible by the extremely low background of the detector obtained after many years of tests and research. This high radio-purity is the element making the performances of Borexino unique. In addition, the accuracy of all the analysis is related to a careful modeling of the detector response function achieved through a calibration campaign of the detector. The detector response function is in general the probability distribution function of a physical quantity of interest, like the energy deposit of  $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$  or  $\gamma$  and/or the interaction position inside the scintillator volume. It allows the link between the physical information and the measured quantities. They are ideally

Solar $\nu$	$E_\nu$ [keV]	$T^{max}$ [keV]	$\sigma_e$ [ $\times 10^{-46}$ cm <sup>2</sup> ]	$\sigma_{\mu,\tau}$ [ $\times 10^{-46}$ cm <sup>2</sup> ]	$P_{ee}$
$pp$	$\leq 420$	261	11.38	3.22	$0.542 \pm 0.016$
${}^7\text{Be}$	384	231	19.14	5.08	$0.537 \pm 0.015$
${}^7\text{Be}$	862	665	57.76	12.80	$0.524 \pm 0.014$
$pep$	1440	1220	108.49	22.08	$0.514 \pm 0.012$
${}^{13}\text{N}$	$\leq 1199$	988	45.32	10.29	$0.528 \pm 0.014$
${}^{15}\text{O}$	$\leq 1732$	1509	70.07	14.96	$0.517 \pm 0.013$
${}^{17}\text{F}$	$\leq 1740$	1517	70.34	15.01	$0.517 \pm 0.019$
${}^8\text{B}$	$\leq 15000$	14500	596.71	106.68	$0.384 \pm 0.009$

TABLE I. The total cross sections  $\sigma_e$  and  $\sigma_{\mu,\tau}$  for solar neutrinos, weighted for the spectral shape in case of continuous energy spectra.  $E_\nu$  is the neutrino energy (end-point for continuous energy spectra) and  $T^{max}$  is the maximal energy of the scattered  $e^-$  according to Eq. 2. The last column gives the electron neutrino survival probability  $P_{ee}$ , weighted for the spectral shape in case of continuous energy spectra, and calculated according to [39] using the oscillation parameters from [16].

Solar- $\nu$	$\Phi_\nu$ (GS98) High-metallicity [cm <sup>-2</sup> s <sup>-1</sup> ]	$\Phi_\nu$ (AGSS09) Low-metallicity [cm <sup>-2</sup> s <sup>-1</sup> ]	$R_\nu$ (GS98) High-metallicity [cpd/100 ton]	$R_\nu$ (AGSS09) Low-metallicity [cpd/100 ton]	Main background
$pp$	5.98 (1 $\pm$ 0.006)	6.03 (1 $\pm$ 0.006)	130.8 $\pm$ 2.4	131.9 $\pm$ 2.4	${}^{14}\text{C}$
${}^7\text{Be}^*(384\text{ keV})$	0.53 (1 $\pm$ 0.07)	0.48 (1 $\pm$ 0.07)	1.90 $\pm$ 0.14	1.73 $\pm$ 0.12	${}^{85}\text{Kr}$ , ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$
${}^7\text{Be}^*(862\text{ keV})$	4.47 (1 $\pm$ 0.07)	4.08 (1 $\pm$ 0.07)	46.48 $\pm$ 3.35	42.39 $\pm$ 3.05	${}^{85}\text{Kr}$ , ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$
$pep$	1.44 (1 $\pm$ 0.012)	1.47 (1 $\pm$ 0.012)	2.73 $\pm$ 0.05	2.79 $\pm$ 0.06	${}^{11}\text{C}$ , ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$
${}^{13}\text{N}$	2.96 (1 $\pm$ 0.14)	2.17 (1 $\pm$ 0.14)	2.42 $\pm$ 0.34	1.78 $\pm$ 0.23	
${}^{15}\text{O}$	2.23 (1 $\pm$ 0.15)	1.56 (1 $\pm$ 0.15)	2.75 $\pm$ 0.42	1.92 $\pm$ 0.29	
${}^{17}\text{F}$	5.52 (1 $\pm$ 0.17)	3.40 (1 $\pm$ 0.16)	0.068 $\pm$ 0.012	0.042 $\pm$ 0.007	
CNO	5.24 (1 $\pm$ 0.21)	3.76 (1 $\pm$ 0.21)	5.24 $\pm$ 0.54	3.74 $\pm$ 0.37	${}^{11}\text{C}$ , ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$
${}^8\text{B}$	5.58 (1 $\pm$ 0.14)	4.59 (1 $\pm$ 0.14)	0.44 $\pm$ 0.07	0.37 $\pm$ 0.05	${}^{208}\text{Tl}$ , ext $\gamma$

\* The production branching ratios of the 384 and 862 keV  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  lines are 0.1052 and 0.8948, respectively. The respective ratio of interaction rates in Borexino is 3.9 : 96.1.

TABLE II. The solar-neutrino fluxes  $\Phi_\nu$  calculated with the high-metallicity Standard Solar Model (GS98) [2], the ones obtained with the low-metallicity model (AGSS09) [19], and the corresponding expected  $\nu$ -interaction rates  $R_\nu$  in Borexino. The fluxes are given in units of  $10^{10}(pp)$ ,  $10^9({}^7\text{Be})$ ,  $10^8(pep, {}^{13}\text{N}, {}^{15}\text{O})$ , and  $10^6({}^8\text{B}, {}^{17}\text{F})$ . The CNO flux is the sum of the  ${}^{13}\text{N}$ ,  ${}^{15}\text{O}$ , and  ${}^{17}\text{F}$  fluxes. The rate calculations are based on Eq. 3. The last column lists some of the relevant background components in the energy region of interest of a given  $\nu$ -species: see Section XI.3 for a discussion about them.

the list of the PMTs detecting one or more photoelectrons (p.e.), the times  $t_i^j$  when the hit  $i$  is detected by the PMT  $j$  and its associated charge  $q_i^j$ . The number of detected hits and the corresponding charge allow to measure the energy released in the scintillator while the list of the times  $t_i^j$  permits to reconstruct the interaction position and is the base for the construction of several pulse-shape variables. Some remarks about the detector (Section II), the electronics, and the data acquisition system (Section VI), and about the scintillator (Section VII) are necessary to understand the observables and the details of the analysis.

## VI. ELECTRONICS AND TRIGGERS

The quantities recorded for each event by the Borexino detector are the amount of light collected by each PMT and the relative detection times of the photons.

Every PMT is AC-coupled to an electronic chain made by an analogue front-end followed by a digital circuit. The analogue front-end performs two tasks: it amplifies the PMT pulse, thus providing a fast input signal for a threshold discriminator mounted on the digital board, and it continuously integrates the PMT current using a gate-less integrator [41]. The integrator output rises when a pulse is generated on the PMT output and it stays constant for 80 ns; then it exponentially decays due to the AC coupling between the PMT and the front-end circuit with a time constant of 500 ns. The firing of the discriminator defines the hit time  $t_i^j$  introduced in



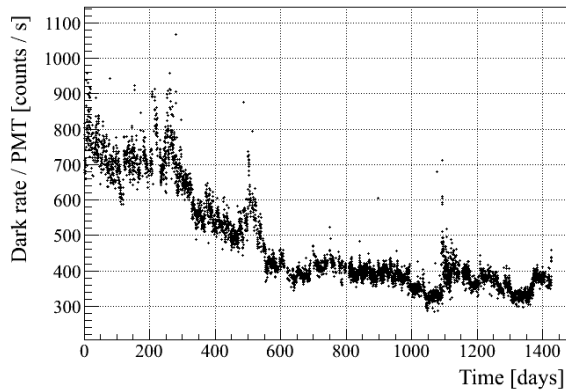


FIG. 4. Mean dark-noise rate per PMT in counts per second as a function of time starting from May 16<sup>th</sup>, 2007 (day 0).

### Section V.

The time of multiple hits on the same PMT is not detected by the digital board when the time delay between two consecutive pulses is less than 140 ns (channel dead time). This dead time is software extended to 180 ns. When the discriminator fires, then the output of the integrator is sampled and digitized by an 8 bit flash ADC; it provides the charge  $q_i^j$  of all those pulses reaching the PMT  $j$  within 80 ns from the time of the discriminator firing at time  $t_i^j$ . Details of the charge measurement including the managing of the multiple hits on the same PMT during the 500 ns decay time are discussed in [41]. More details concerning the digital electronics and the triggering system are in [42] and [20].

Borexino is a self-triggering multiplicity detector, and thus the main trigger fires when a minimum of  $K$  Inner-Detector PMTs detect at least one photoelectron within a selected time window, normally set to 99 ns. The  $K$ -threshold was set in the range 25 to 30 hits PMTs in the data runs considered in this paper, corresponding approximately to an energy threshold ranging between 50 and 60 keV. When a trigger occurs, the time  $t_i^j$  and the charge  $q_i^j$  of each hit detected in a time gate of predefined length are acquired and stored. The gate length was initially 6.9  $\mu$ s and was enlarged to 16.5  $\mu$ s in December 2007, with dead time between two consecutive gates of 6.1  $\mu$ s and 2.5  $\mu$ s, respectively.

The hit time is measured by a Time-to-Digital Converter (TDC) with about 0.5 ns resolution which is smaller than the intrinsic 1.2 ns time jitter of the PMTs. A dedicated sub-ns 394 nm pulsed laser system is used to measure and then to software equalize the time response of all the PMTs [20] via a set of optical fibers that reach every PMT. The typical accuracy of the time equalization is better than 0.5 ns and the time calibration procedure is performed at least once a week. A similar system based on a set of LEDs is employed for the Outer Detector.

The typical dark rate of internal PMT is about 400 - 500 counts/s (see Fig. 4), which yields, on average,

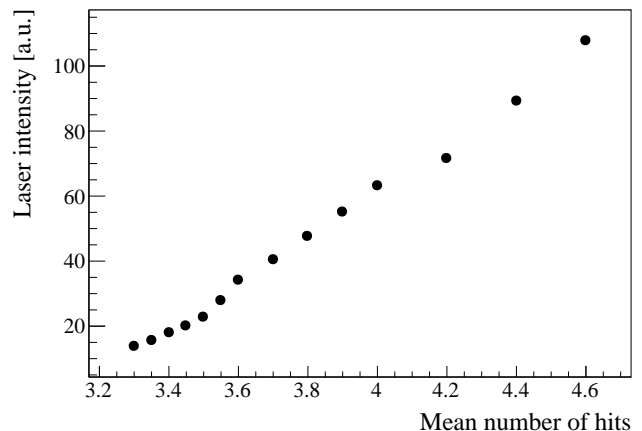
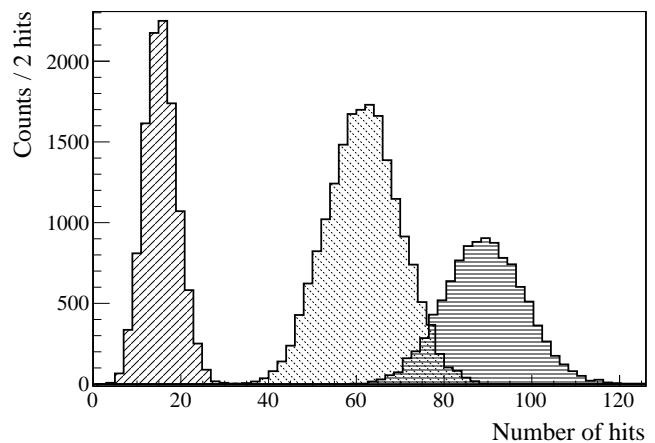


FIG. 5. Top: examples of the distributions of the number of PMT hits for three laser intensities; Bottom: relation between the average number of PMT hits detected by Borexino Inner Detector and the laser intensity. These calibration values, which are approximately, but not exactly, linear, were used to compute the detection efficiency shown in Fig. 6.

15 random hits within the 16  $\mu$ s acquisition gate and less than 0.5 hits on average in a typical scintillation pulse (considering 500 ns duration of the signal).

The efficiency of the triggering system was measured by means of the following procedure: by using the 394 nm laser and the optical fibers that deliver the laser pulse to each internal PMT, we have first calibrated the laser intensity. In a set of runs with variable laser intensity a pulse was sent both to the laser and to the Borexino Trigger Board (BTB), yielding a precise measurement of the average number of PMT hits as a function of the laser intensity. The pulse sent to the BTB guarantees that data is acquired regardless of the number of PMTs fired, particularly important at the lowest laser intensities. We scanned 14 different laser intensities, ranging from 14 up to 120 average PMT hits per event, which roughly corresponds to the energy region between 30 keV and 240 keV. The result of this calibration scan is shown in Fig. 5.

We then performed again a similar scan, this time avoiding to trigger Borexino with the pulse sent to the BTB but just leaving the standard Borexino trigger func-

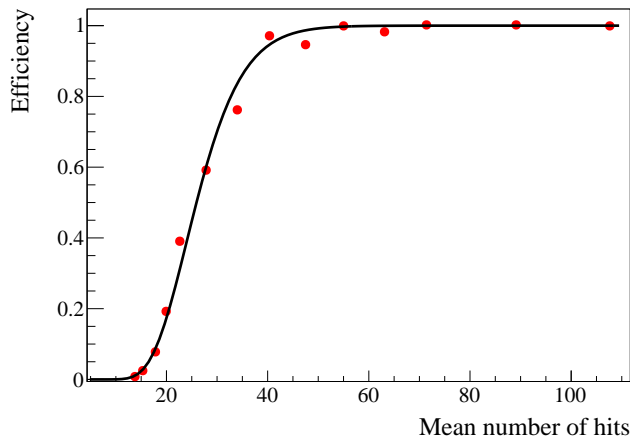


FIG. 6. The trigger efficiency as a function of the average number of detected PMT hits. For each point, the average number of hits was obtained from the calibration shown in Fig. 5. The fit function is an error function with standard deviation computed assuming exact Poisson statistics. The fit mean value is 25.7, in a very good agreement with the nominal triggering threshold of  $K = 25$ .

tion as in normal physics run. The detection efficiency for a given laser intensity is then defined as a fraction of the fired laser pulses (counted by a scaler) which actually gave a DAQ trigger. For each laser intensity, the average number of PMT hits was obtained from the calibration shown in Fig. 5. The resulting trigger efficiency as a function of the mean number of PMT hits is shown in Fig. 6. The fit function is an error function with standard deviation computed assuming exact Poisson statistics. The fit mean value is 25.7, in a very good agreement with the nominal triggering threshold set during the measurement to  $K = 25$ . The curve clearly shows that the triggering efficiency is effectively one when the number of fired PMTs is above 40, corresponding approximately to a deposited energy of 80 keV.

The trigger efficiency measurement shown in Fig. 6 was done without applying any correction due to the number of dead channels. The correction is time-dependent and is normally done for data analysis, as later described in Section IX. This correction is not relevant here, being the purpose of this test to show that the triggering logic was working properly, and that the triggering efficiency can be safely assumed to be 1 for all energies of interest for this paper. The number of live PMTs in a run is always at least 80% of the total, so even applying a correction, the effective threshold raises from about 40 to about 50, well below the physics region of interest to this paper.

The trigger efficiency at higher energy (514 keV) was also studied with the  $^{85}\text{Sr}$  calibration source as reported in [34] and was again found to be well compatible with 1. However, the uncertainty in the activity of the calibration sources was too large to use those tests as a definitive proof of the good behavior of the triggering system.

A software code (called clustering algorithm) identifies

within the acquisition gate the group of hits that belong to a single scintillation event (here called cluster). The cluster duration is typically  $1.5\ \mu\text{s}$  long, although different values have been used for some analysis. Fast radioactive decays or random coincidence events detected in a single trigger gate are separated by this clustering algorithm. Delayed coincidences separated by more than the gate width are detected in two separate events (DAQ triggers). Figure 7 shows an event with two clusters.

The readout sequence can also be activated by the OD through a dedicated triggering system firing when at least six Outer-Detector PMTs detect light within a time window of 150 ns. Regardless of the trigger type, the data from both the Inner and Outer Detectors are always recorded.

A dedicated trigger was developed for cosmogenic neutron detection. After each muon passing and triggering both the OD and the ID, a 1.6 ms wide acquisition gate is opened. This duration is sufficient since it corresponds to more than six times the neutron capture time. Neutrons are searched for as clusters in this dedicated long trigger as well as clusters within the muon gate itself. The dead-time between the muon and neutron trigger is  $(150 \pm 50)\ \text{ns}$ . To test the neutron detection efficiency a 500 MHz waveform digitizer (CAEN v 1731) is fed with the Analogue Sum of all the signals of the ID PMTs properly attenuated. The data from this single channel Analogue Sum system are acquired every time OD triggers, regardless if the ID did or did not trigger. More details about the neutron detection can be found in [25]. The single channel sum provides a high-resolution copy of the total detector signal after a muon shower, which is used to cross check the performances of the electronics and data acquisition processing the signal of each PMT.

For detector monitoring and calibration purposes, every two seconds three calibration events of three different types are acquired: *i)* *laser* events in which the ID-PMTs are synchronously illuminated by the 394 nm laser pulse;

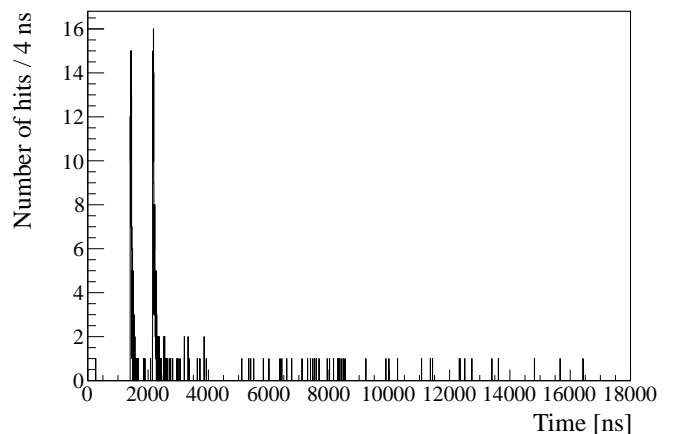


FIG. 7. An example of a single data acquisition gate (so called event) containing two well separated clusters, which are due to two different interactions inside the scintillator.

ii) *pulser* events with a calibration pulse used for testing the electronics chain independently of the PMT status; iii) *random triggers* are acquired without any calibration signal in order to follow the PMT dark rate. The typical triggering rate during the runs analyzed in this paper was in the range  $25 - 30 \text{ s}^{-1}$ , including all trigger types. The triggering rate is largely dominated by the  $\beta$ -decay of the  $^{14}\text{C}$  isotope with  $156 \text{ keV}$  end point energy.

The gain of the PMTs is checked for every run by fitting the  $^{14}\text{C}$  charge spectrum of each photomultiplier with the sum of two Gaussian curves representing the single and double photoelectron response. The  $^{14}\text{C}$  data provide a natural calibration source giving single photoelectrons on the hit PMTs with very good approximation, since less than 100 PMTs from 2200 are hit in single event. The gain of the PMT  $j$  is measured through the ADC position  $P_{ADC}^j$  of its first photoelectron peak. After such calibration, the charge  $q_{iADC}^j$  associated to the hits  $i$  and measured in ADC channels can be converted in the number of photoelectrons  $q_i^j$  (often called p.e.):

$$q_i^j = \frac{q_{iADC}^j}{P_{ADC}^j} \quad (4)$$

## VII. SCINTILLATOR PROPERTIES

The scintillator properties and the processes dominating the light propagation (absorption, re-emission, Rayleigh scattering) are largely discussed in [22], [23], and [43]. Particularly relevant for the measurements under discussion are the high light yield (about  $10^4$  photons/MeV) and transparency (the attenuation length is close to  $10 \text{ m}$  at  $430 \text{ nm}$ ), the fast time response, the ionization quenching effect, and the pulse-shape discrimination capability.

Charged particles losing energy in organic liquid scintillators excite the scintillator molecules, which then de-excite emitting fluorescence light. The amount of emitted light is not simply related to the total energy lost by the particle but to details of the energy-loss mechanism. The ionization quenching effect [45] introduces an intrinsic non-linear relation between the deposited energy and the emitted light which, for a fixed energy, depends on the particle type. This non-linearity must be known and taken into account in the detector energy response function. In general, the higher is the specific energy loss  $dE/dx$ , the lower is the number of scintillation photons  $dY^{\text{ph}}/dx$  emitted per unit of path length  $dx$ ; different semi-empirical relations between  $dE/dx$  and  $dY^{\text{ph}}/dx$  can be found in the literature [46]. For  $\beta^+$  and  $\beta^-$  we are using the following, so called Birk's relation:

$$\frac{dY^{\text{ph}}}{dx} = \frac{Y_0^{\text{ph}} \cdot dE/dx}{1 + kB \cdot dE/dx}, \quad (5)$$

where  $kB$  is called the quenching parameter, and  $Y_0^{\text{ph}}$  ( $\simeq 10^4$  photons/MeV) is the scintillation light yield in absence of quenching ( $kB = 0$ ).

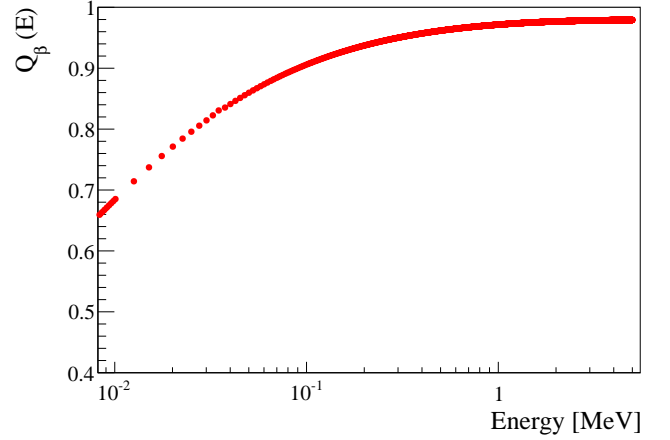


FIG. 8. The quenching factor  $Q_\beta(E)$  calculated from Eq. 7 with the Borexino quenching parameter  $kB = 0.011 \text{ cm/MeV}$ .

The quenching parameter  $kB$  is of the order of  $10^{-2} \text{ cm/MeV}$ , but its precise value has to be experimentally determined for specific scintillator mixtures. The  $kB$  of the Borexino scintillator was determined based on the calibration with  $\gamma$ -sources. Two independent methods give consistent results:  $kB = (0.0109 \pm 0.0006) \text{ cm/MeV}$  obtained with the Monte Carlo-based procedure (see Section XVIII) and  $kB = (0.0115 \pm 0.0007) \text{ cm/MeV}$  based on the analytical method (Section XVII).

Regardless of the particular functional shape that links  $dE/dx$  to  $dY^{\text{ph}}/dx$ , the total number of emitted photons  $Y_p^{\text{ph}}$  is then related to the amount of deposited energy  $E$  through a non-linear relation:

$$Y_p^{\text{ph}} = Y_0^{\text{ph}} \cdot Q_p(E) \cdot E, \quad (6)$$

where  $Q_p(E) < 1$  is called quenching factor. The suffix  $p$  recalls that  $Q_p(E)$  and  $Y_p^{\text{ph}}$  depend on the particle type  $p$  ( $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$ , or  $\gamma$ ). Considering also the relation of Eq. 5, the quenching factor for  $\beta$  particles  $Q_\beta(E)$  can be obtained by integrating  $dY^{\text{ph}}/dx$ :

$$Q_\beta(E) = \frac{1}{E} \int_0^E \frac{dE}{1 + kB \cdot dE/dx}. \quad (7)$$

The energy dependence of  $Q_\beta(E)$  calculated with  $kB = 0.011 \text{ cm/MeV}$  is reported in Fig. 8. The non-linear effect is more and more relevant as long as the energy deposit is below a few hundreds keV.

The quenching effect for  $\alpha$  particles with a few MeV of energy (as those from radioactive decays of nuclides at rest) is higher, and consequently the amount of emitted light is reduced, by a factor of the order of ten with respect to an electron with the same energy [20]. For instance, the  $5400 \text{ keV}$   $\alpha$ 's emitted by the  $^{210}\text{Po}$  populate the range around  $420 \text{ keV}$  (only about  $100 \text{ keV}$  is lost in the nucleus recoil). The determination of the  $Q_\alpha$  is discussed in section XIX. Quenching is also important for protons but it is not relevant for the results discussed in this paper.

Finally, the quenching effect influences also the detection of  $\gamma$  rays. In general, the amount of scintillation light emitted when a  $\gamma$  with energy  $E$  is fully absorbed by the scintillator is significantly lower than the amount of light emitted by an electron with the same energy  $E$ . This effect originates from the fact that  $\gamma$  rays cannot directly excite the molecules of the scintillator. In fact, the interactions of  $\gamma$  rays in the scintillator are observed by detecting the scintillation light emitted due to the various electrons (and positrons) scattered (or produced) by the parent  $\gamma$ 's. Every electron deposits in the scintillator an amount of energy  $E_i$  which is a fraction of the initial energy of the  $\gamma$  ray. The amount of scintillation light  $Y_\gamma^{\text{ph}}$  generated by the  $\gamma$  is then obtained by summing over all the electron contributions  $i$  obtaining the following relation:

$$Y_\gamma^{\text{ph}} = Y_0^{\text{ph}} \sum_i E_i Q_\beta(E_i) \equiv Y_0^{\text{ph}} \cdot Q_\gamma(E) \cdot E, \quad (8)$$

which defines  $Q_\gamma(E)$ . Since  $Q_\beta(E)$  decreases as a function of the energy, it results that  $Q_\gamma(E)$  is smaller than  $Q_\beta(E)$  for the same energy  $E$ . As a result, the quenching factor is not negligible for  $\gamma$  rays with  $E$  in the MeV range.

The amount of Cherenkov light produced is expected to be at the level of few percent of the scintillation light yield and therefore not negligible. The number of Cherenkov photons  $N_{\text{Ch}}^{\text{ph}}$  radiated per unit length and wavelength is [47]:

$$\left( \frac{d^2 N_{\text{Ch}}^{\text{ph}}}{dx d\lambda} \right)_{c_h} \propto \frac{1}{\lambda^2} \left( 1 - \frac{c^2}{v^2 \cdot n^2(\lambda)} \right), \quad (9)$$

where  $n(\lambda)$  is the wavelength dependent refraction index in the scintillator and  $v$  is the particle velocity in the scintillator. The dependency of the refraction index of the scintillator  $n$  on the wavelength  $\lambda$  makes the primary spectrum of the Cherenkov light energy dependent: in fact, the condition

$$\left( 1 - \frac{c^2}{v^2 \cdot n^2(\lambda)} \right) > 0 \quad (10)$$

must be satisfied. The primary spectrum of the Cherenkov light extends into the ultraviolet region which is not directly detectable by the PMTs. The mean free path of this ultraviolet light in the scintillator is very short (sub-mm) and then this light is almost totally absorbed by the scintillator. However, the scintillator re-emits a fraction of this absorbed light with probability of  $\sim 80\%$  according to its emission spectrum. In this way the ultraviolet light invisible to the PMTs is transformed into detectable light.

The emission times of all types of produced light depend on details of the charged particle energy loss. This is the base for the particle discrimination capability of the scintillator. We describe the probability  $P(t)$  of the light emission time according to

$$P(t) = \sum_{i=1}^4 \frac{w_i}{\tau_i} \exp^{-t/\tau_i}, \quad (11)$$

assuming that the energy deposit happens at the time  $t = 0$ . The values of  $\tau_{1,2,3,4}$  and  $w_{1,2,3,4}$ , reported in Table III, have been obtained fitting the experimental data measured in a dedicated setup [48].

As it results from the Table III, the time distribution of light generated by  $\alpha$  particles has a tail longer than that of the  $\beta$ 's. This feature is used to statistically subtract the  $\alpha$ -background mainly from  $^{210}\text{Po}$ , as described in detail in Subsection XIII.3 and in Section XIV.

The emission spectrum of the scintillator, the attenuation length, and the index of refraction as functions of the wavelength have been extensively measured [22], [23], [43]. Their values influence the light propagation inside the detector and the number of photoelectrons collected by the PMTs.

## VIII. THE CALIBRATION WITH RADIOACTIVE SOURCES

The detector response function has been modeled in two ways: one is based on the use of a Monte Carlo code and another one relies on analytical models. Both approaches benefit from dedicated calibration campaigns performed with radioactive sources inserted in the detector. The campaigns with internal radioactive sources inserted in the scintillator have been performed in October 2008, January, June, and July 2009, while that with an external  $\gamma$  source located in the outer buffer region has been performed in July 2010 and December 2011. Table IV lists the sources deployed in the IV and in the outer buffer and Fig. 9 shows the location of the various sources in the IV.

All the hardware and details of the calibration systems, as well as demonstration that it preserved the detector radio-purity can be found in [34].

The  $\gamma$  sources have been realized by dissolving the radioisotope in an aqueous solution inside a 1 cm radius quartz vial. They have been placed in the detector center and in some off-center positions. The  $\gamma$  particles loose basically all their energy in the scintillator and they allow to calibrate the absolute energy scale.

The radon source (a scintillator vial loaded by radon) has been deployed in about 200 positions. This source allowed to study the accuracy of the position reconstruction and the uniformity of the energy response of the detector, namely the change of the amount of collected

i =	1	2	3	4
$\tau_i$ [ns] $\beta$	3.2	25	73.4	500
$w_i$ $\beta$	0.86	0.05	0.06	0.02
$\tau_i$ [ns] $\alpha$	3.2	13.5	63.9	480
$w_i$ $\alpha$	0.58	0.18	0.14	0.09

TABLE III. Parameters used in Eq. 11 for the calculation of the light-emission time probability given separately for  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  particles.

Isotope	Type	Energy [keV]
Inner Vessel		
$^{57}\text{Co}$	$\gamma$	122+14 (89%)
$^{57}\text{Co}$	$\gamma$	136 (11%)
$^{139}\text{Ce}$	$\gamma$	165
$^{203}\text{Hg}$	$\gamma$	279
$^{85}\text{Sr}$	$\gamma$	514
$^{54}\text{Mn}$	$\gamma$	834
$^{65}\text{Zn}$	$\gamma$	1115
$^{60}\text{Co}$	$\gamma$	1173, 1332
$^{40}\text{K}$	$\gamma$	1460
$^{222}\text{Rn}$	$\alpha$ $\beta$	0 - 3200
$^{14}\text{C}$	$\beta$	0 - 156
$^{241}\text{Am} - ^9\text{Be}$	neutrons	< 11000
	$\gamma$ (H)	2233
	$\gamma$ ( $^{12}\text{C}$ )	4946
Outer Buffer		
$^{228}\text{Th}$ ( $^{208}\text{Tl}$ )	$\gamma$	2615

TABLE IV. Isotopes used in the calibration campaign. The last two rows of the sources deployed in the IV give the two  $\gamma$  lines obtained when neutrons are captured on H or by  $^{12}\text{C}$ .

light when a given energy deposit happens in various positions in the scintillator volume.

A 10 Bq  $^{241}\text{Am} - ^9\text{Be}$  neutron source was inserted into the detector in order to study the detector response to neutrons with energies up to 9 MeV. The neutron interactions in the scintillator made it possible to study also the recoil protons from neutron scattering in the medium and to extend the calibration in the energy range above 2 MeV. The latter, thanks to the  $\gamma$  lines generated by neutron capture on Hydrogen (2233 keV) and, with a probability at the % level, on  $^{12}\text{C}$  nucleus (4946 keV). The neutron captures on the stainless steel insertion arm additionally produced gamma lines up to 8 - 9 MeV.

A custom made 5.41 Bq  $^{228}\text{Th}$  source has been placed in the outer buffer in ten different positions. The main purpose of this calibration was to study the external background (Section XI), mainly the energy and radial distributions of the  $\gamma$ 's from the  $^{208}\text{Tl}$  decay. This isotope is one of the daughter isotopes of  $^{228}\text{Th}$  ( $\tau = 2.76$  years) and the emission probability of the 2615 keV  $\gamma$  ray is 35.6%.

## IX. ENERGY RECONSTRUCTION

Borexino works mainly in single photoelectron regime, which means that each PMT detects on average much less than one photon hit per event. We define four energy estimators called  $N_p$ ,  $N_h$ ,  $N_{pe}$ , and  $N_{pe}^d$  counting the number of measured quantities such as number of hit PMTs, hits or photoelectrons during the duration of the cluster defined in Section VI.

$N_p$  is the number of PMTs that have detected at least one hit.  $N_h$  is the total number of detected hits.  $N_h$  generally differs from  $N_p$  because a PMT can collect more than one hit if their time separation is more than the dead time discussed in Section VI. Both  $N_p$  and  $N_h$  are computed starting from the measured values  $N_p^m$  and  $N_h^m$ :

$$N_p^m = \sum_{j=1}^{N'} p^j \quad (12)$$

$$N_h^m = \sum_{j=1}^{N'} h^j, \quad (13)$$

where  $p^j = 1$  when at least one photon is detected by PMT  $j$  and  $p^j = 0$  otherwise,  $h^j$  can assume the values 0 or 1, 2,... $n$  if the PMT  $j$  detects 0, 1, 2,... $n$  hits, and  $N'$  is the number of correctly working channels.  $N'$  is smaller than the total number of installed PMTs because of temporary electronics problems and due to the PMT failures.  $N'$  is evaluated on a nearly event-by-event basis using calibration events acquired during the run, as

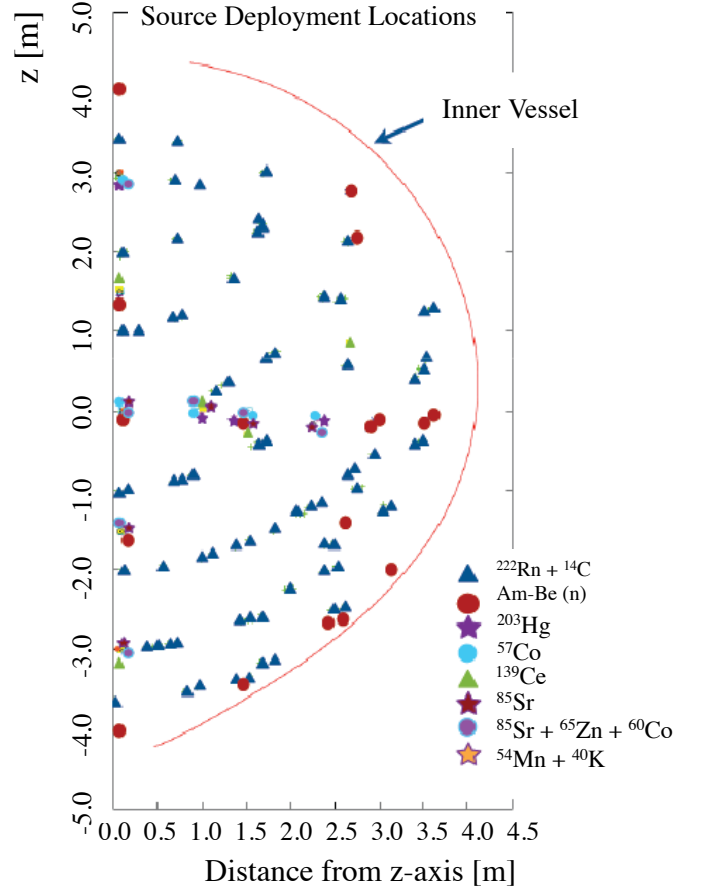


FIG. 9. Position of the various radioactive sources deployed in the scintillator and used to calibrate the Borexino detector.

described in Section VI. The  $N_p$  and  $N_h$  variables are then obtained after normalizing the measured values to  $N_{tot} = 2000$  working channels through the relations:

$$N_p = \frac{N_{tot}}{N'(t)} N_p^m = f_{eq}(t) N_p^m \quad (14)$$

$$N_h = \frac{N_{tot}}{N'(t)} N_h^m = f_{eq}(t) N_h^m, \quad (15)$$

in which the time dependent equalization function  $f_{eq}(t)$  is defined as  $f_{eq}(t) = \frac{N_{tot}}{N'(t)}$ .

The third energy variable,  $N_{pe}$ , is the total number of collected photoelectrons (p.e.) normalized to  $N_{tot}$  channels. First, the measured charge  $N_{pe}^m$  of an event is calculated by summing the hit charges  $q_i^j$  expressed in p.e. (based on the charge calibration of single channel given in Eq. 4):

$$N_{pe}^m = \sum_{i=1}^{N_h^m} q_i^j. \quad (16)$$

The number of channels with working ADC's and charge readout,  $N''$ , is normally fewer than  $N'$  by a few tens of channels. In this charge calculation only hits from such correctly working channels are considered. The charge  $N_{pe}^m$  is then normalized to  $N_{tot}=2000$  working channels:

$$N_{pe} = \frac{N_{tot}}{N''(t)} N_{pe}^m = c_{eq}(t) N_{pe}^m, \quad (17)$$

which also defines  $c_{eq}(t)$ , a time dependent charge normalization function.

An additional variable  $N_{pe}^d$ , similar to  $N_{pe}$ , is calculated by subtracting the expected number of photoelectrons  $q_d$  due to dark noise during the signal duration. It is an estimate of the true number of photoelectrons produced during each event, defined as:

$$N_{pe}^d = c_{eq}(t) \left( \sum_{i=1}^{N_h^m} q_i^j - q_d \right). \quad (18)$$

We note that for the purposes of noise reduction, described in Section XIII, we also define an additional variable  $N_{pe-avg}$  which only differs from  $N_{pe}$  in that the sum is carried over all usable channels  $N'$ : for those channels that do not have a working ADC or charge readout, the charge is estimated as the average charge of all other (valid) hits in a 15 ns window around the hit.

Figure 10 shows  $N'$  and  $N''$  as a function of time during the data taking.

The different estimators are not independent. The precise relation between them and the true energy deposit inside the scintillator is one of the key elements determining the accuracy of the solar-neutrino measurement in Borexino. Note that in the energy region of interest in this paper, the two estimators  $N_p$  and  $N_h$  are very

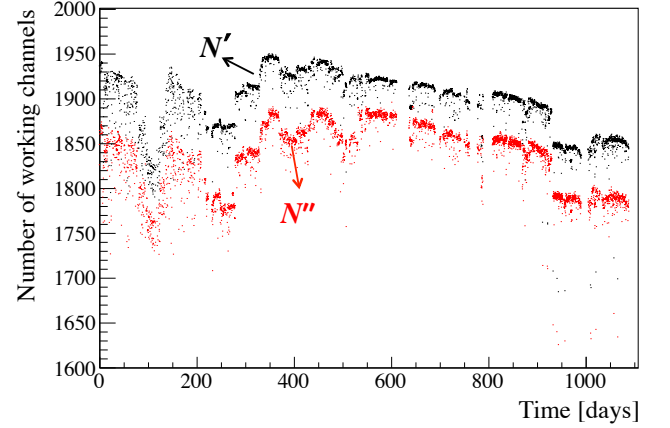


FIG. 10. The number  $N'$  (black) and  $N''$  (red) of available channels for the computation of  $N_h / N_p$  and  $N_{pe}$  energy estimators, respectively, as a function of time starting from May 16<sup>th</sup>, 2007 (day 0). The slow decrease is due to the PMT mortality, while the sudden changes are due to the failure/repair of the electronics.

similar. In addition, the difference between  $N_{pe}$  and  $N_{pe}^d$  is also very small. While details are discussed in Sections XVII and XVIII, here it is useful to point out that an energy deposit of 1 MeV corresponds to about  $N_{pe} \simeq N_{pe}^d \simeq 500$ .

## X. POSITION RECONSTRUCTION

The position reconstruction algorithm determines the most likely vertex position  $\vec{r}_0$  of the interaction using the arrival times  $t_i^j$  of the detected photons on each PMT (defined in Section VI) and the position vectors  $\vec{r}^j$  of these PMTs. The algorithm subtracts from each measured time  $t_i^j$  a position dependent time-of-flight  $T_{flight}^j$  from the interaction point to the PMT  $j$ :

$$T_{flight}^j(\vec{r}_0, \vec{r}^j) = |\vec{r}_0 - \vec{r}^j| \frac{n_{eff}}{c} \quad (19)$$

and then it maximizes the likelihood  $L_E(\vec{r}_0, t_0 | (\vec{r}^j, t_i^j))$  that the event occurs at the time  $t_0$  in the position  $\vec{r}_0$  given the measured hit space-time pattern  $(\vec{r}^j, t_i^j)$ . The maximization uses the probability density functions (p.d.f.) of the hit detection, as a function of time elapsed from the emission of scintillation light, which are shown in Fig. 11. As it can be seen, the exact shape of the p.d.f. used for every hit depends on its charge  $q_i^j$ .

The quantity  $n_{eff}$  appearing in Eq. 19 is called "effective refraction index" and it is used to define an effective velocity of the photons: it is a single parameter that globally takes into account the fact that photons with different wavelengths travel with different group velocity and that photons do not go straight from the emission to the detection points but they can be scattered or reflected. The value  $n_{eff} = 1.68$  was determined using



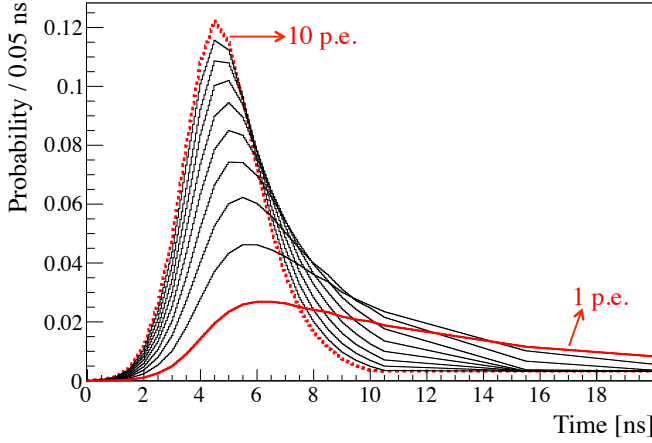


FIG. 11. Probability density functions for detected hits as a function of time elapsed from the emission of scintillation light. Different curves are for increasing values of the hit charge  $q_i^j$  collected at the phototube: from 1 p.e. (red solid curve) to 10 p.e. (red dashed curve).

the calibration data with radioactive sources described in Section VIII. More details on this parameter can be found in [34]. Note that  $n_{\text{eff}}$  is larger than the actual index of refraction of pseudocumene measured at 600 nm to be  $n_{\text{PC}} = 1.50$ .

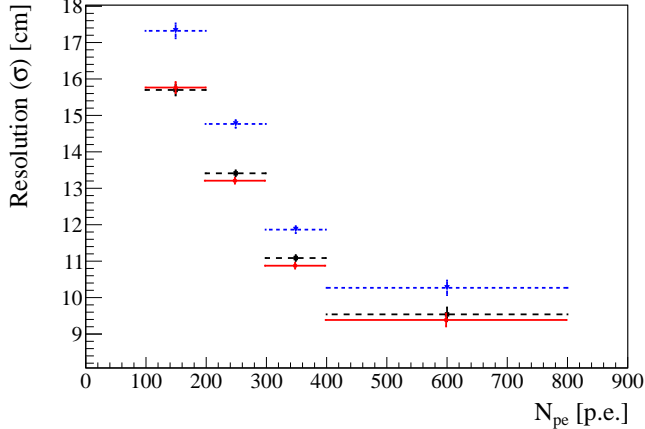


FIG. 12. Resolution ( $\sigma$ ) of the reconstructed  $x$  (solid red),  $y$  (dashed black), and  $z$  (dotted blue) coordinates as a function of energy (in number of photoelectrons) for events from calibration sources placed in the center of the detector.

The data collected during the calibration campaign allowed to map thoroughly the performance of the position reconstruction code as a function of energy and position. In particular, the position reconstruction resolution ( $\sigma_{x,y,z}$ ) has been studied for different energies and positions. As an example, Fig. 12 shows the dependency of  $\sigma_x$ ,  $\sigma_y$ ,  $\sigma_z$  on energy for events in the center: the resolution for coordinates  $x$  and  $y$  ranges from 15 cm at lower energies ( $N_{pe} \simeq 150$  corresponding to about 300 keV)

to 9 cm at higher energies ( $N_{pe} \simeq 500$  corresponding to about 1 MeV). The  $z$  coordinate is reconstructed with a slightly worse resolution as expected, since the PMT coverage in  $z$  has a larger granularity.

The nominal and reconstructed source positions have been compared for all the collected calibration data. The nominal position of the source is obtained independently by a system of 7 CCD cameras mounted on the Stainless Steel Sphere. Figure 13 shows, as an example, the difference between the mean value of the reconstructed coordinates  $x$ ,  $y$ , and  $z$  and the corresponding nominal values for events due to  $^{214}\text{Po}$  alphas from the  $^{222}\text{Rn}$  chain. The coordinates  $x$  and  $y$  are well reconstructed: the sigma of the distribution is  $\sim 0.8\text{cm}$  with tails that extend up to 3 cm (note that the contribution of the uncertainty on the CCD position is not disentangled). Instead, the  $z$ -coordinate shows a systematic shift of  $\sim 3\text{cm}$  downwards with respect to the nominal position. The origin of this shift is unclear: it is not related to the algorithm itself, since the reconstruction of Monte Carlo simulated data does not show this effect. It could be due to a small variation of the index of refraction as a function of  $z$  due to the gradient in temperature (and therefore in density) of the scintillator. In any case, the contribution of this shift to the systematics of the fiducial volume determination is small (less than 0.2%).

## XI. BACKGROUNDS AND CHOICE OF FIDUCIAL VOLUME

The achievement of extremely low background levels in Borexino represents the essential milestone that has allowed to obtain the solar neutrino results. In this section we describe different background components classified as:

- *External and surface background:* events generated outside the scintillator are referred to as external background, while events generated by the radioactive contaminants of the nylon IV are referred to as surface background. These background components, described in Subsection XI.1, determine the shape of the wall-less region in the Borexino scintillator (Fiducial Volume, FV) used in different analysis, as explained in Subsection XI.2.
- *Internal background:* events generated by the decay of radioactive isotopes contaminating the scintillator are described in Subsection XI.3.
- *Cosmic muons and cosmogenic background:* subsection XI.4 is dedicated to the discussion of the residual muon flux and to the muon-induced radioisotopes. More details about the cosmogenic background in Borexino at 3800 m water-equivalent depth can be found in [44].

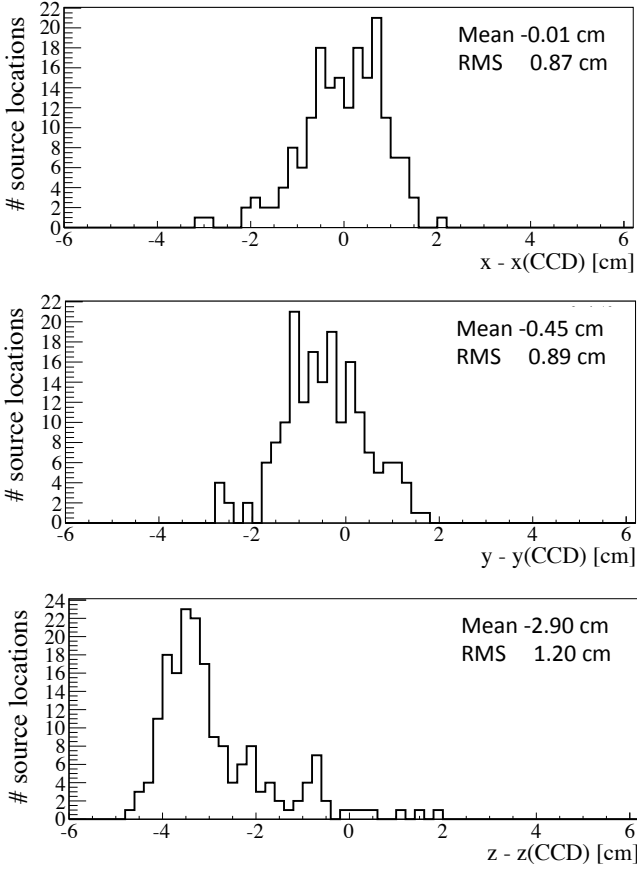


FIG. 13. Distribution of differences between the reconstructed and nominal (CCD) coordinates for the radon source data ( $^{214}\text{Po}$ ) measured in 182 different positions in the scintillator:  $x$  (top),  $y$  (center), and  $z$  (bottom)

### XI.1. External and surface background

The main source of external background is the radioactivity of the materials that contain and surround the scintillator: examples are the vessel support structure, PMTs, light cones, and other hardware mounted on the Stainless Steel Sphere. Since the radioactive decays occur outside the scintillator, the only background that can reach the inner volume and deposit energy are  $\gamma$  rays. The position reconstruction (Section X) allows to select the FV where the event rate due to external background is negligible. The  $\beta$  or  $\gamma$  decays due to surface background events may be reconstructed at some distance from the IV and the FV definition aims to exclude also these events.

Figure 14 shows the distribution of all detected events in the scintillator for different energy ranges. The IV is clearly visible as a ring of higher activity at a radius  $R \simeq 4.25$  m. Also distinctly visible are the vessel end-caps (IV end-caps at  $z = \pm 4.25$  m, OV end-caps at  $z = \pm 5.5$  m), the regions of the highest activity in the scintillator. These events mainly populate the energy region between the  $^{14}\text{C}$  end-point and the  $^{210}\text{Po}$  peak, shown in a) panel of Fig. 14. The high rate of events

occurring outside the IV, above the top end-cap, most prominently seen in the 145 - 300  $N_{pe}$  region, is due to a small leak in the IV (see Subsection II.1).

The spatial distribution of the external background is shown in panel d) of Fig. 14, reporting the reconstructed position of events with  $N_{pe}$  between 900 and 1500. The higher rate of external background in the top hemisphere, compared to the bottom one, is due to the nylon vessel being shifted slightly upwards and therefore closer to the PMTs. As can be seen, the number of events decreases as one moves radially away from the SSS towards the IV center. This energy region is dominated by  $^{208}\text{Tl}$  and  $^{214}\text{Bi}$   $\gamma$ -ray interactions, with a smaller contribution ( $\sim 25\%$ ) from muon-induced  $^{10}\text{C}$  and  $^{11}\text{C}$  decays, dominating the energy region 425 - 650  $N_{pe}$ , shown in panel c) of Fig. 14.

The contribution of the external background is small in the  $^7\text{Be}$ -neutrino measurement with the 75 ton FV but it is important for the *pep* and CNO neutrino detection. Table V presents the expected count rates for  $\gamma$  rays of different isotopes from different external sources in the FV used in latter analysis. The exact shape of this FV is defined in Table VI. The external background contribution has been included in the multivariate-fit approach (see Section XXI) exploiting the different radial dependencies of the external background (which exponentially decreases inside the IV) and of the internal background and the signal (which are both assumed to be uniformly distributed in the FV).

The Monte Carlo code has been used to obtain the energy spectrum and the radial distribution of the external background. The background originated from the radioactive contamination ( $^{208}\text{Tl}$  and  $^{214}\text{Bi}$ ) of all the PMTs is simulated adopting particular software procedures to reduce the amount of necessary computation

Source	cpd in the <i>pep</i> -FV
	250 keV < E < 1300 keV
$^{208}\text{Tl}$ from PMTs	$\sim 0.2$
$^{214}\text{Bi}$ from PMTs	$\sim 0.9$
$^{40}\text{K}$ from PMTs	$\sim 0.2$
Light cones and SSS	0.6 - 1.8
Nylon vessels	< 0.05
End-cap regions	< 0.06
Buffer	< 0.02

TABLE V. Expected rates of external  $\gamma$ -ray backgrounds relevant for the *pep* and CNO analysis. The estimates for  $^{208}\text{Tl}$ ,  $^{214}\text{Bi}$ , and  $^{40}\text{K}$  from the PMTs were made using the Geant-4 Monte Carlo code, starting from the measured contamination of the PMTs [49]. The lower and upper limits for the rates from the SSS and light cones were scaled to the *pep*-FV from previous estimates [24], assuming a  $\gamma$ -ray absorption length of 25 cm. The upper limit for the background originated in the buffer fluid has been estimated with the Monte Carlo assuming contamination of  $^{238}\text{U}$  and  $^{232}\text{Th}$  in the buffer that are 100 times greater than those in the scintillator.



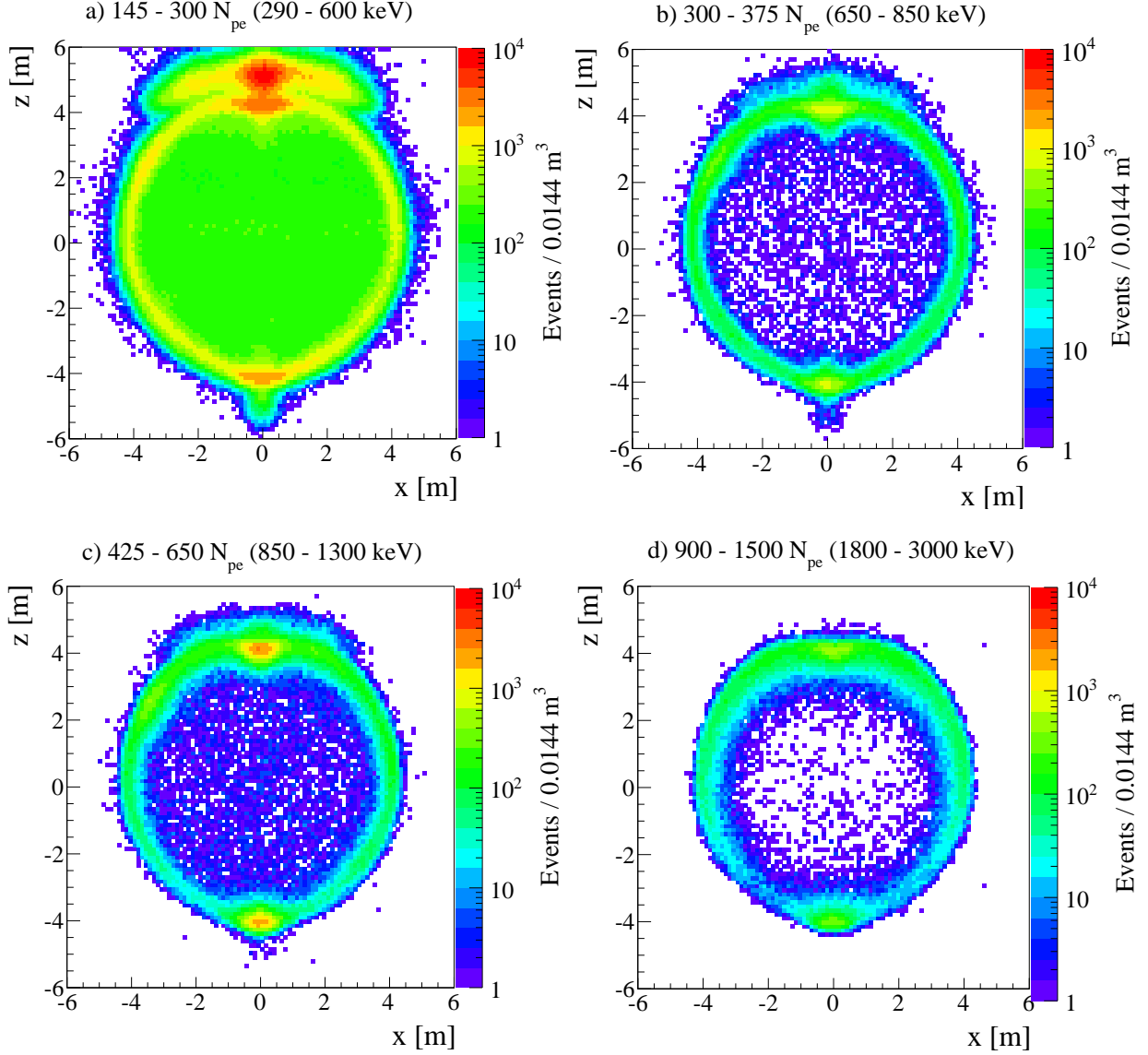


FIG. 14. Spatial distribution (in the  $x - z$  plane,  $|y| < 0.5$  m) of all reconstructed events (besides muons) in different energy regions. The color axis represents the number of events per  $0.0144 \text{ m}^3$  in a pixel of  $0.12 \text{ m} \times 1.00 \text{ m} \times 0.12 \text{ m}$  ( $x \times y \times z$ ). a)  $^{210}\text{Po}$  peak region:  $145 - 300 N_{pe}$  (290 - 600 keV), b)  $^7\text{Be}$  shoulder:  $300 - 375 N_{pe}$  (650 - 850 keV), c)  $^{11}\text{C}$  energy region:  $425 - 650 N_{pe}$  (850 - 1300 keV), d)  $^{208}\text{Tl}$  peak region:  $900 - 1500 N_{pe}$  (1800 - 3000 keV). Events occurring outside the IV ( $R = 4.25$  m), near the top end-cap ( $z = 4.25$  m), most clearly seen in the low-energy region shown in a) plot, are due to the small leak of scintillator from the IV to the buffer region (Section II.1).

time: in fact, obtaining at the end of the simulation a spectrum of about  $10^4$  events requires to generate and track more than  $10^{12}$  events. The resulting CPU time needed for a single event is about  $6 \times 10^{-5}$  s leading to an acceptable total computation time. The validity of the simulation has been established by comparing the radial and energy distributions of the events measured with the  $^{228}\text{Th}$  external calibration source (having  $^{208}\text{Tl}$  as one of its daughters, see Section VIII) and their simulation. Figure 15 compares the energy spectra of the simulated and measured events while Fig. 16 shows the agreement between the measured and simulated radial distributions. The attenuation length of 2610 keV  $\gamma$  rays was measured

to be 25 cm.

## XI.2. Fiducial volume in different analyses

The optimal choice of FV depends on the type of analysis to be performed. For the measurement of the interaction rate of  $^7\text{Be}$ ,  $pep$ , and CNO neutrinos, the FV was defined searching for a volume where all events are almost uniformly distributed and thus the external background is negligible or, at least, is strongly suppressed. Additional requirements have been introduced in the  $pep$  and CNO neutrino analysis (Section XXV) and are related to

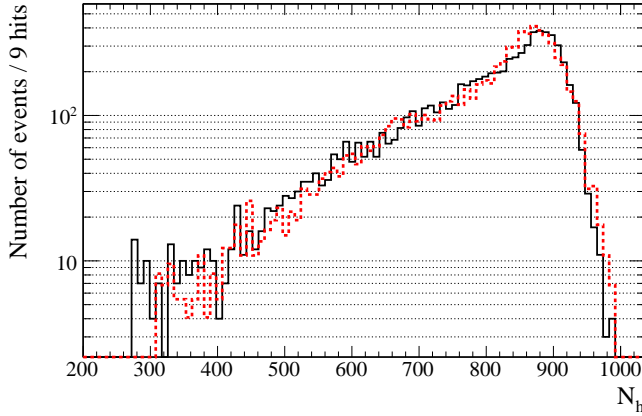


FIG. 15. Comparison between the energy spectra ( $N_h$  energy estimator) for events from the external  $^{228}\text{Th} / ^{208}\text{Tl}$  source calibration data (black solid line) and from the 2610 keV simulated external  $\gamma$  rays (red dotted line), reconstructed within 3 m from the detector center. The  $\chi^2/\text{NDF}$  between the two histograms is  $\simeq 1.2$ . The source is positioned in the upper hemisphere; a similar result is obtained for the lower one.

the best efficiency of the  $^{11}\text{C}$  subtraction (Section XV). We have therefore chosen the FV to lie within a sphere of radius  $R_{\text{max}}$  with a cut in the  $z$  coordinate ( $z < z_{\text{min}}$  and  $z > z_{\text{max}}$ ) to remove the end-cap events for the  $^7\text{Be}$ ,  $\text{pep}$  and CNO analysis. Table VI summarizes these values and some additional relevant quantities for each choice of FV (dimensions, total volume and mass, number of target electrons).

In the context of the search for a possible day–night effect in the  $^7\text{Be}$  neutrinos interaction rate (Section XXIII), the spectra of the events collected during the day and night times have been subtracted and analyzed without performing a spectral fit of all components. An enlarged FV, a sphere of 3.3 m radius, including a contribution from the external background but with a larger number of neutrino–induced events results to be convenient.

A search for the optimal choice of an enlarged FV has been done also in the framework of the analysis of the annual modulation of  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate due to the annual variation of the Earth – Sun distance (Section XXIV). In this context, particular attention has been devoted to the IV shape and position. In fact, these are slowly changing in time since the IV is not mechanically fixed; a stronger deformation has developed during the formation of a small leak in the IV (Section II.1). Thus, an enlarged FV may contain a surface background contribution variable in time. We have developed an algorithm to continuously monitor the IV position and shape (Subsection XI.2.1). The FV used in this analysis is defined as the volume including all the events for which the reconstructed position is at a distance larger than a given  $d$  from the IV surface. Due to the asymmetric vessel deformation, the selection of  $d$  is angle dependent such that for:  $\theta(0, \pi/3)$   $d = 100$  cm,  $\theta(\pi/3, 2\pi/3)$   $d = 80$  cm, and for  $\theta(2\pi/3, \pi)$   $d = 60$  cm. Additionally, because of

the proximity of hot end-caps (see Fig. 14), these regions were removed by a cone-like cut in the top and bottom of the detector as presented in Fig. 17. The corresponding volume is changing in time and has a mean value of  $(141.83 \pm 0.55)$  ton, almost twice larger than the one used for the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate measurement (75 ton). Figure 17 shows an example of the  $\rho$ – $z$  projection of this FV in comparison with the 75 ton one.

The temperature-dependent density  $\rho_{\text{PC}}(T)$  of pure pseudocumene, expressed in  $\text{g}/\text{cm}^3$ , is given by [53]:  $\rho_{\text{PC}}(T) = (0.89179 \pm 0.00003) - (8.015 \pm 0.009)10^{-4} \cdot T$ , where  $T$  is the temperature in degree Celsius. For a PC + PPO mixture the density  $\rho_{\text{mix}}(T)[\text{g}/\text{cm}^3]$  is  $\rho_{\text{mix}} = \rho_{\text{PC}}(T) \cdot (1 + (0.316 \pm 0.001)\eta_{\text{PPO}})$ , where  $\eta_{\text{PPO}}$  is the concentration of dissolved PPO in  $\text{g}/\text{cm}^3$ . Using the average values of the temperature of the scintillator of Borexino of  $T = (15.0 \pm 0.5)^\circ\text{C}$  and the concentration of the dissolved PPO of  $\eta_{\text{PPO}} = 1.45 \pm 0.05 \text{ g}/\text{cm}^3$ , we obtain a scintillator density of  $0.8802 \pm 0.0004 \text{ g}/\text{cm}^3$ . Taking into account the chemical composition of the scintillator (including the 1.1% isotopic abundance of  $^{13}\text{C}$ ), we get number of target electrons of  $(3.307 \pm 0.003) \times 10^{31}$  electrons/100 ton.

#### XI.2.1. Dynamical reconstruction of the vessel shape

In this section we describe a method to reconstruct the IV shape and position based on the events due to the vessel radioactive contaminants.

The IV profile is determined by using background events reconstructed on its surface and identified as due to  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  decay. Figure 18 shows the  $z - x$  distribution of these events in the energy region 800 – 900 keV. Assuming azimuthal symmetry, the dependence of the reconstructed radius  $R$  on the  $\theta$  angle is fitted (see Fig. 19) with a 2D analytical function (red line) having a Gaussian width. The function itself is either a high-order polynomial or a Fourier series function. The end-points are fixed in the fit at  $R = 4.25$  m because the end-caps are hold in place by rigid supports, whereas the total length of the vessel profile is included as a penalty factor in  $\chi^2$  (the vessel can deform but not expand elastically in any significant way). The procedure was calibrated by a method which we have used in the first year of data taking, based on inner-detector pictures taken with the CCD cameras [34]. This old method requires to switch off the PMTs, so it cannot be used often. The new one does not require DAQ interrupts and allows therefore to monitor the variation of the IV shape on a weekly basis. The precision of this method is of the order of 1%.

### XI.3. Internal background

We discuss here the background from radioactive isotopes contaminating the scintillator, their rates, spectral shapes, and life-times. The contribution of the internal background producing  $\gamma$  or  $\beta$  decays can be sepa-

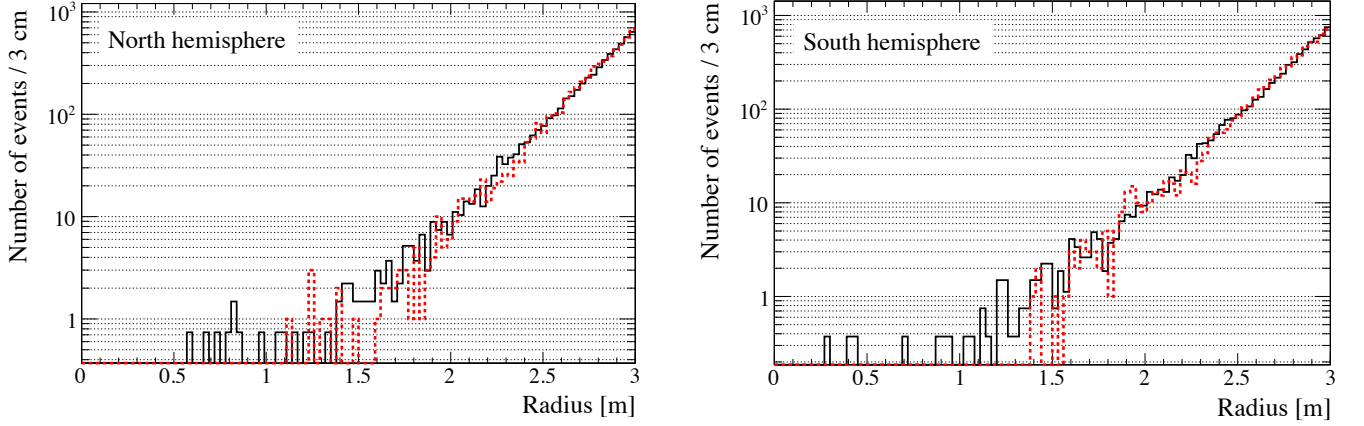


FIG. 16. Comparison between the reconstructed radius of events with energy  $N_h > 400$  from the external  $^{228}\text{Th} / ^{208}\text{Tl}$  source calibration data (black solid line) and from the 2610 keV simulated external  $\gamma$  rays (red dotted line), reconstructed within 3 m from the detector center. The left and right plots show examples for a source position in the upper/north and lower/south hemispheres, respectively. The  $\chi^2/\text{NDF}$  between the two histograms (Monte Carlo and data) is in the range 0.8 – 0.9.

Analysis	$R_{\text{max}}$ [m]	$z_{\text{min}}$ [m]	$z_{\text{max}}$ [m]	Volume [ $m^3$ ]	Mass [ton]	$N_{e-}$ $\times 10^{31}$
$^7\text{Be}-\nu$ rate	3.02	-1.67	1.67	86.01	75.47	2.496
$pep-\nu$ and CNO- $\nu$	2.8	-1.8	2.2	81.26	71.30	2.358
$^7\text{Be}-\nu$ rate day-night asymmetry	3.3	-3.3	3.3	151.01	132.50	4.382
$^7\text{Be}-\nu$ rate annual modulation (mean FV)				161.64	141.83	4.690

TABLE VI. Definition of the fiducial volumes used in the different solar neutrino analysis.

rated from the signal only through its spectral shape. Additional removal possibilities are available when the pulse-shape discrimination procedure can be used, as for example for  $\alpha$  particles.

Figure 20 shows the expected energy spectrum in Borexino including solar neutrinos and the relevant internal and cosmogenic background sources, taking into account the realistic energy resolution of the detector. The rates of solar neutrinos correspond to the SSM expectations while those of background components are set to values typical for Borexino Phase-I period.

Tables VII, IX ( $^{238}\text{U}$  chain), X ( $^{232}\text{Th}$  chain) summarize the decay characteristics of relevant isotopes that may contribute to the internal background. We underline that the values reported below refer to the background measured in the Phase-I of Borexino. Some of these backgrounds have been reduced by purification, but their values will be quoted only in future papers. Table VIII summarizes the rate of the main components of the internal background.

### XI.3.1. $^{14}\text{C}$

The  $^{14}\text{C}$  isotope ( $\beta$ -emitter with 156 keV end point and 8270 years mean-life, see Table VII) unavoidably

accompanies the  $^{12}\text{C}$  with relative abundances that may span several orders of magnitude. It is produced in the upper atmospheric layers through the interaction of cosmogenic neutrons with nitrogen. Even though  $^{14}\text{C}$  has a geologically short mean-life, it is constantly being replenished by the cosmic-ray flux.  $^{14}\text{C}$  is chemically identical to  $^{12}\text{C}$  and thus it cannot be removed from the organic scintillator through purification. In order to reduce the levels of contamination, the Borexino scintillator is derived from petroleum from deep underground where the levels of  $^{14}\text{C}$  are reduced by roughly a factor of a million compared with the usual values in organic materials.

Isotope	Mean Life	Energy [keV]	Decay
$^{14}\text{C}$	$8.27 \times 10^3$ yrs	156	$\beta^-$
$^{85}\text{Kr}$	15.4 yrs	687	$\beta^-$
$^{40}\text{K}$ (89%)	$1.85 \times 10^9$ yrs	1310	$\beta^-$
$^{40}\text{K}$ (11%)	$1.85 \times 10^9$ yrs	1460	EC + $\gamma$
$^{39}\text{Ar}$	388 yrs	565	$\beta^-$

TABLE VII. List of the main internal radioactive backgrounds considered in this work, except those related to  $^{238}\text{U}$  and  $^{232}\text{Th}$  chains, which are reported in Tables IX and X.

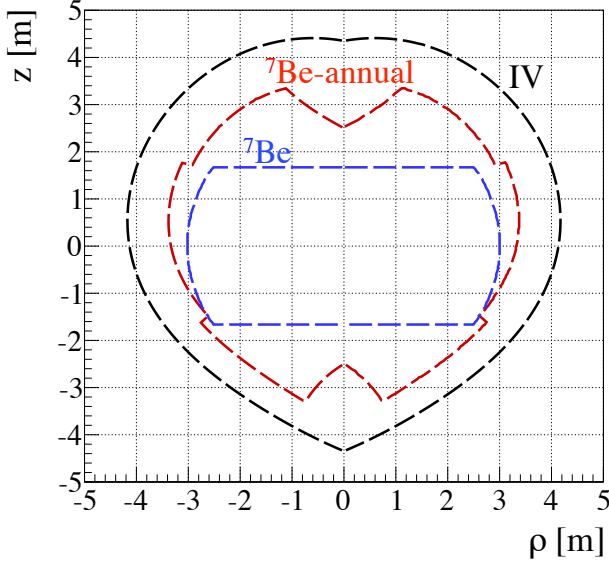


FIG. 17.  $\rho$ - $z$  projection of the IV as of May 3<sup>rd</sup>, 2009 (black). The blue curve shows the shape of the 75 ton FV used for the measurement of the  ${}^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  interaction rate. The red curve illustrates the profile of the FV used for the  ${}^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  annual modulation analysis.

Since the petroleum has been underground for millions of years, the remaining amount of  ${}^{14}\text{C}$  are possibly due to underground neutron production.

The extremely low  ${}^{14}\text{C}/{}^{12}\text{C}$  ratio of  $10^{-18}$  g/g has been measured in CTF [50]. This result was a key milestone in the low-background research and development of Borexino. Even with this large reduction in contamination,  ${}^{14}\text{C}$  is by far the largest Borexino background and it determines the detector low-energy threshold. The  ${}^{14}\text{C}$  rate is

Isotope	Decay Rate [cpd/100 ton]	Reference
${}^{14}\text{C}$	$(3.46 \pm 0.09) \times 10^6$	Section XI.3.1
${}^{85}\text{Kr}$	$(30.4 \pm 5.3 \pm 1.5)^{(a)}$ $(31.2 \pm 1.7 \pm 4.7)^{(b)}$	Section XI.3.2 Section XXII
${}^{40}\text{K}$	$<0.42$ (95% C.L.)	Section XI.3.3
${}^{39}\text{Ar}$	$\sim 0.4$	Section XI.3.4
${}^{238}\text{U}$	$(0.57 \pm 0.05)$	Section XI.3.5
${}^{222}\text{Rn}$	$(1.72 \pm 0.06)$	Section XI.3.5
${}^{210}\text{Bi}$	$(41.0 \pm 1.5 \pm 2.3)$	Section XI.3.7
${}^{210}\text{Po}$	$5 \times 10^2 - 8 \times 10^3$	Section XI.3.8
${}^{232}\text{Th}$	$(0.13 \pm 0.03)$	Section XI.3.9

TABLE VIII. Decay rate of the main internal radioactive backgrounds considered in this work; if the rate has changed in time the minimum and maximum values are quoted. For  ${}^{85}\text{Kr}$  contamination, both the results of delayed coincidence method (a) and spectral fit analysis (b) are reported.

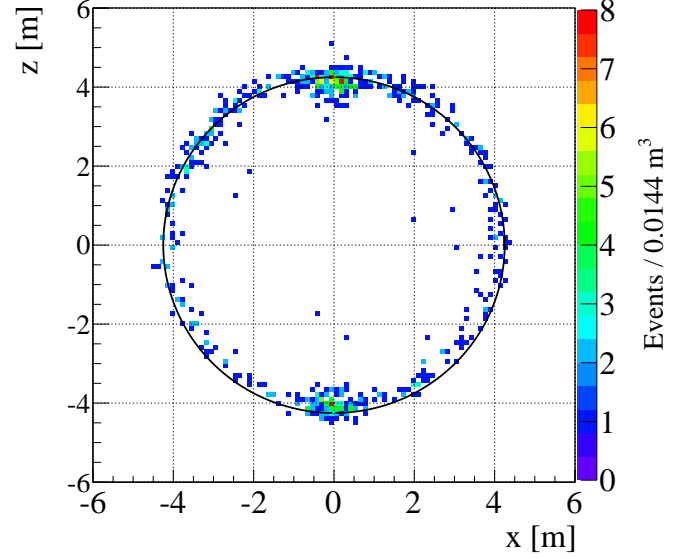


FIG. 18.  $z$ - $x$  distribution ( $|y| < 0.5$  m) of the events in the energy region 800 - 900 keV, which are mainly due to  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$  contaminating the IV surface. The color axis represents the number of events per  $0.0144 \text{ m}^3$  in a pixel of  $0.12 \text{ m} \times 1.00 \text{ m} \times 0.12 \text{ m}$  ( $x \times y \times z$ ). This spatial distribution reveals the IV shift and deformation with respect to its nominal spherical position shown in solid black line.

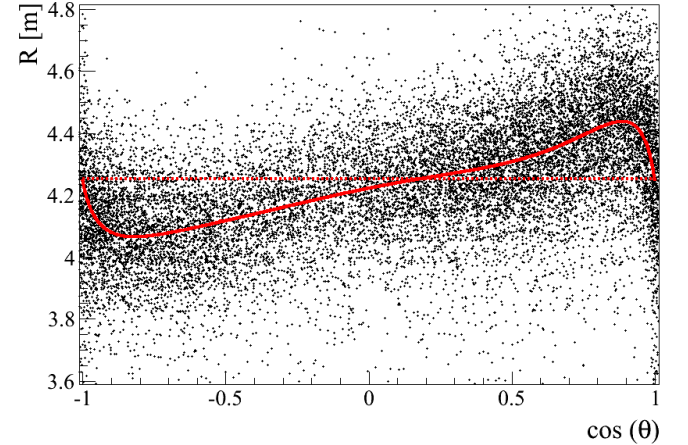


FIG. 19.  $R - \cos(\theta)$  distribution of the events in the energy region 800 - 900 keV from November 2007 used for the IV shape reconstruction. The best-fit vessel shape is shown in a solid red line. The dotted red line represents the nominal spherical vessel with  $R = 4.25$  m.

$(3.46 \pm 0.09) \times 10^6$  cpd/100 ton, about  $\simeq 10^5$  times higher than the expected  ${}^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  signal rate. A hardware trigger threshold at  $\simeq 50$  keV reduces the trigger rate to about 30 Hz. The 156 keV  ${}^{14}\text{C}$  end-point is low enough (even after the smearing effects of the detector energy resolution) that we can safely fit the energy spectrum beyond it and keep high sensitivity to the  ${}^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$ 's.

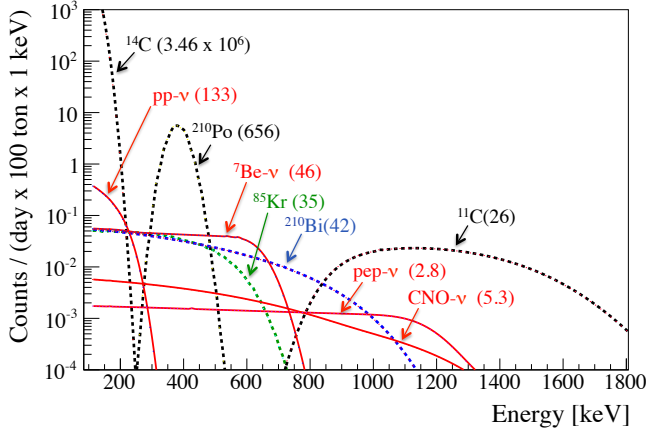


FIG. 20. Calculated energy spectra due to solar neutrinos (shown as continuous red line) and of the main background components (dotted lines). The realistic Borexino energy resolution is included. The rates are fixed at the values shown in parenthesis and given in units of cpd/100 ton.

### XI.3.2. $^{85}\text{Kr}$

The isotope  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  is a  $\beta$ -emitter with 687 keV end-point (99.57% branching ratio, see below) and 15.4 years mean-life (see Table VII). Its spectral shape is very similar to the electron recoil spectrum due to  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  and it is one of the most important backgrounds in the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  analysis. It is present in the air mostly because of nuclear explosions in atmosphere at the average concentration of  $\sim 1 \text{ Bq/m}^3$ , thus even extremely small air exposures during the detector-filling operations would yield significant contamination. As mentioned in previous sections, the development and use of  $\text{N}_2$  with low Kr content during the scintillator manipulations has been of fundamental importance.

With a small branching ratio of 0.43%,  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  decays into the meta-stable  $^{85\text{m}}\text{Rb}$  emitting a  $\beta$  particle with maximum kinetic energy of 173 keV. The  $^{85\text{m}}\text{Rb}$  then decays to the ground state  $^{85}\text{Rb}$  by emitting a 514 keV  $\gamma$  ray with  $2.06 \mu\text{s}$  mean-life. This fast  $\beta - \gamma$  sequence is the signature used to obtain a measure of the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  concentration independent from the one resulting from the spectral fit.

Candidate  $^{85}\text{Kr}(\beta) - ^{85\text{m}}\text{Rb}(\gamma)$  sequences of events are selected looking at the triggers with two clusters (see Section VI) that are not identified as muons. The two candidates must be reconstructed with a distance smaller than 1.5 m and with a time delay between 300 ns and 5840 ns (four times the life-time of this decay). The 300 ns value ensures that the efficiency of the clustering algorithm can be assumed to be 100% at the energies of interest. The spatial distance cut has been tuned to maximize the selection efficiency over background and by taking into account the worsening of spatial reconstruction performances at the  $^{85}\text{Kr}-\beta$  low energies. The

energy window of the  $^{85}\text{Kr} \beta$  is chosen between the detector threshold (typically  $\sim 50 \text{ keV}$ ) and 260 keV and the one of the  $^{85\text{m}}\text{Rb} \gamma$  lies in the interval 280–560 keV. Some background for  $^{85}\text{Kr}(\beta - \gamma)$  search originates from  $^{212}\text{Bi} - ^{212}\text{Po}$  coincidences due to thoron emanated from the IV (see Section XI.3.9). This becomes negligible by requiring that the  $^{85\text{m}}\text{Rb}$  candidate is reconstructed within a sphere of 3.5 m radius (156.2 ton).

Accidental  $^{14}\text{C} - ^{210}\text{Po}$  coincidences are the most important background for the  $^{85}\text{Kr}(\beta - \gamma)$  measurement. They are partially suppressed by requiring that the  $G_\beta$  variable (see Section XII) of the  $^{85\text{m}}\text{Rb}$  candidates falls within the interval  $(-0.07, 0.02)$ . This background has been quantified by looking for events satisfying all the selection criteria but with a time delay in a displaced interval between 2 and 8 ms: 3.1 fake events are expected in the 33-events data sample. After the accidental background subtraction, the 29.9 surviving events correspond to a  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  contamination of  $(30.4 \pm 5.3 \text{ (stat)} \pm 1.5 \text{ (sys)}) \text{ cpd/100 ton}$  where the systematic uncertainty is mostly coming from the FV definition and from the efficiency of the  $^{85}\text{Kr}-\beta$  energy cut.

The cut efficiencies have been evaluated with the help of the Monte Carlo code and of the source calibration data. The  $^{14}\text{C}$  source emulates the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  decay while the  $^{85}\text{Sr}$  source, like  $^{85}\text{Rb}$ , produces a 514 keV  $\gamma$ . A run-by-run analysis was necessary to evaluate the detector trigger efficiency, since no low-energy cut was applied to the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  candidate. The overall combined efficiency of all the cuts is 19.5%.

### XI.3.3. $^{40}\text{K}$

$^{40}\text{K}$  is a primordial nuclide with a mean-life of 1.85 billion years (see Table VII) and a natural abundance of 0.012%. In addition to the dominant pure  $\beta$ -decay (89% BR and 1310 keV end-point), there is a 10.7% BR for electron capture to an excited state of  $^{40}\text{Ar}$ . This results in the emission of a mono-energetic 1460 keV  $\gamma$  ray, which helps to distinguish the  $^{40}\text{K}$  energy spectrum from the other  $\beta$  spectra, though it does also mean that  $^{40}\text{K}$  decays at the vessel end-caps or in components on the SSS may deposit energy within the FV.

This isotope can enter into the scintillator primarily in two ways. The first way is through micron or sub-micron dust particulates. The fraction of natural potassium in the Earth crust is about 2.5% by weight, corresponding to roughly 800 Bq/kg from  $^{40}\text{K}$ . Secondly, it was found that commercially available PPO, the wavelength shifter added to the scintillator, had a potassium contamination at the level of parts per million. Given the PPO concentration of 1.5 g/l of scintillator, this equates to  $10^{-9} \text{ g-K/g-scintillator}$  or roughly to  $2.7 \times 10^5 \text{ cpd/100 ton}$ , nearly 6000 times the expected  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  rate.

The maximum concentration of potassium that was considered acceptable during the Borexino design is  $\sim 10^{-14} \text{ g-K/g-scintillator}$ . The  $^{40}\text{K}$  contamination was



reduced through distillation, filtration, and water extraction of the PC-PPO solution [51]. Unfortunately, the efficiency of these methods at removing  $^{40}\text{K}$  is unknown and so we cannot a priori calculate the expected rate in the scintillator. For this reason, we have included the  $^{40}\text{K}$  spectrum as a free parameter in all spectral fits. The upper limit of 0.42 cpd/100 ton (95% C.L.) results from the  $pep-\nu$  analysis, see Section XXV.

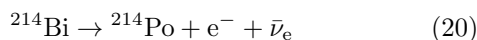
#### XI.3.4. $^{39}\text{Ar}$

The isotope  $^{39}\text{Ar}$  is produced primarily through cosmic ray activity in the atmosphere. It is a pure  $\beta$ -emitter with a  $Q$ -value of 565 keV, see Table VII. With an end-point fairly close to the 665 keV  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  shoulder and no accompanying  $\gamma$  rays or delayed coincidence, it would be hard to disentangle the  $^{39}\text{Ar}$  spectrum from that of  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$ . Therefore, great care was taken in ensuring that the  $^{39}\text{Ar}$  contamination was as low as possible. The argon levels in the specially prepared low Ar/Kr nitrogen used for the stripping of the scintillator was around 0.005 ppm (by volume). When mixed in equal volumes of gaseous nitrogen and pseudocumene, argon will partition itself in the ratio 4.1 : 1, respectively [52]. Given an activity of 1.4 Bq/m<sup>3</sup> in atmospheric argon, this translates to an expected rate of less than 0.02 cpd/100 ton in the scintillator. However, as it was observed by the high  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  rate, there appears to have been a small air leak during the vessel filling. The activity of  $^{39}\text{Ar}$  in air (13 mBq/m<sup>3</sup> [52]) is roughly 75 times lower than that of  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  (1 Bq/m<sup>3</sup>). Assuming that all the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  contamination ( $\sim 30$  cpd/100 ton) in the scintillator came from the air leak, and that the ratio of  $^{39}\text{Ar}$  to  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  was the same as in the atmosphere, the expected  $^{39}\text{Ar}$  contamination is 0.4 cpd/100 ton. At this level, the contribution of  $^{39}\text{Ar}$  to the spectrum is negligible and we have not included it in the spectral fits. The hypothesis that all the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  contamination is due to the air leak is supported by the results of the recent purification campaign of the scintillator which results very effective in reducing the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  contamination. The resulting value is consistent with 0 cpd/100 ton and it appears stable in time.

#### XI.3.5. $^{238}\text{U}$ chain and $^{222}\text{Rn}$

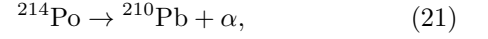
$^{238}\text{U}$  is a primordial radioactive isotope with a mean-life of 6.45 billion years. It is the most common isotope of uranium, with a natural abundance of 99.3%. Table IX reports the relevant information about the  $^{238}\text{U}$  decay chain containing eight  $\alpha$  and six  $\beta$  decays and ending with the stable  $^{206}\text{Pb}$ .

The concentration of contaminants of the  $^{238}\text{U}$  chain in secular equilibrium can be measured by identifying the fast decay sequence  $^{214}\text{Bi} - ^{214}\text{Po}$  that offers a delayed coincidence tag:



Isotope	Mean Life	Energy [keV]	Decay
$^{238}\text{U}$	$6.45 \times 10^9$ yrs	4200	$\alpha$
$^{234}\text{Th}$	34.8 days	199	$\beta^-$
$^{234m}\text{Pa}$	1.70 min	2290	$\beta^-$
$^{234}\text{U}$	$3.53 \times 10^5$ yrs	4770	$\alpha$
$^{230}\text{Th}$	$1.15 \times 10^5$ yrs	4690	$\alpha$
$^{226}\text{Ra}$	$2.30 \times 10^3$ yrs	4790	$\alpha$
$^{222}\text{Rn}$	5.51 days	5490	$\alpha$
$^{218}\text{Po}$	4.40 min	6000	$\alpha$
$^{214}\text{Pb}$	38.7 min	1020	$\beta^- \gamma$
$^{214}\text{Bi}$	28.4 min	3270	$\beta^- \gamma$
$^{214}\text{Po}$	236 $\mu\text{s}$	7690	$\alpha$
$^{210}\text{Pb}$	32.2 yrs	63	$\beta^- \gamma$
$^{210}\text{Bi}$	7.23 days	1160	$\beta^-$
$^{210}\text{Po}$	200 days	5410	$\alpha$
$^{206}\text{Pb}$	stable	—	—

TABLE IX. The  $^{238}\text{U}$  decay chain showing isotopes, life-times, maximum released energies and type of decay. A large number of  $\gamma$  line accompanying many of the decays are not reported in the table.



with  $\tau = 238 \mu\text{s}$  (the  $^{214}\text{Po}$  life-time),  $Q$  of the  $^{214}\text{Bi}$ -decay equal to 3272 keV, and  $\alpha$  energy of 7686 keV. However, these two isotopes are  $^{222}\text{Rn}$  daughters and the hypothesis of secular equilibrium is often invalid due to radon diffusion through surfaces or a possible contamination of the scintillator with radon coming from air.

The  $^{214}\text{Bi} - ^{214}\text{Po}$  candidates are searched for by analyzing consecutive events which are not tagged as muons; their time delay is requested to be between 20 and 944  $\mu\text{s}$  (4 life-times) and their reconstructed spatial distance less than 1 m. The energy must be in the range (180 - 3600) keV for the  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  candidate and (400 - 1000) keV (electron equivalent) for the  $^{214}\text{Po}$  candidate. The overall efficiency of these cuts has been evaluated as 90% through a Monte Carlo simulation.

The number of  $^{214}\text{Bi} - ^{214}\text{Po}$  coincidences has been monitored continuously during the data taking. A sharp increase followed by the decay with the 5.5 days mean-life of  $^{222}\text{Rn}$  has been observed in correlation with operations performed on the detector (like IV refilling, insertion of the calibration sources). No persistent contamination was introduced by any of such operations suggesting that the observed  $^{214}\text{Bi} - ^{214}\text{Po}$  activity was due to the emanation of  $^{222}\text{Rn}$  from the pipes or from the inserted materials. Figure 21 shows the  $^{214}\text{Bi} - ^{214}\text{Po}$  rate versus time in the whole scintillator volume. Figure 22 shows the  $z - \rho$  ( $\rho = \sqrt{x^2 + y^2}$ ) distribution of the  $^{214}\text{Po}$  events in a period of no operations. This spatial distribution suggests a higher surface contamination than the

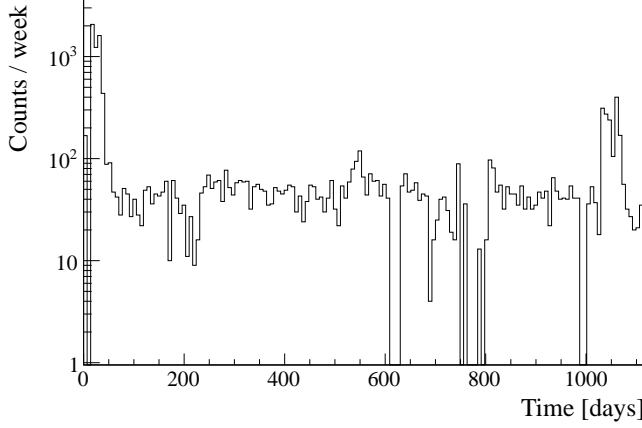


FIG. 21. Number (counts/week) of  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  -  $^{214}\text{Po}$  coincidences detected in the whole scintillator volume as a function of time starting from May 16<sup>th</sup>, 2007 (day 0). The spikes are due to the filling operations.

bulk one. The mean rate of  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  -  $^{214}\text{Po}$  coincidences in the  $^7\text{Be}$ -FV in the period from May 2007 to May 2010 is  $(1.72 \pm 0.06)$  cpd/100 ton.

The  $^{238}\text{U}$  concentration in the scintillator has been inferred from the asymptotic  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  -  $^{214}\text{Po}$  rate in the  $^7\text{Be}$ -FV in absence of operations which is  $(0.57 \pm 0.05)$  cpd/100 ton. Assuming secular equilibrium, the resulting  $^{238}\text{U}$  contamination is  $(5.3 \pm 0.5) \times 10^{-18}$  g/g. This is 20 times lower than the target design of Borexino.

From the measured number of  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  -  $^{214}\text{Po}$  coincidences, we deduced the number of  $^{214}\text{Pb}$  events to be included in the spectral fit. For the *pep* and CNO neutrino analysis, the only isotope in the chain before the  $^{222}\text{Rn}$  that could yield a measurable contribution in the count rate is  $^{234\text{m}}\text{Pa}$  with  $Q$  value of 2290 keV.

The natural abundance of  $^{235}\text{U}$ , the parent isotope of the actinium chain, is only 0.7%, thus its activity is fully negligible. Searching for the double- $\alpha$  time coincidence of  $^{219}\text{Rn}$  and  $^{215}\text{Po}$  ( $\tau = 1.78$  ms) from this chain results in a rate of  $(0.05 \pm 0.04)$  cpd/100 ton, consistent with the natural abundance.

#### XI.3.6. $^{210}\text{Pb}$

$^{210}\text{Pb}$  is a  $\beta$ -emitter in the  $^{238}\text{U}$ -decay chain. Due to its long mean-life (32 years) and its tendency to adsorb on to surfaces, it is often found out of secular equilibrium with the  $^{222}\text{Rn}$  section of the chain. While  $^{210}\text{Pb}$  itself is not a problem, since its end-point ( $Q$ -value = 63.5 keV) is well below the energy region of interest for solar neutrinos, its daughters,  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  and  $^{210}\text{Po}$ , are a major source of background in Borexino.

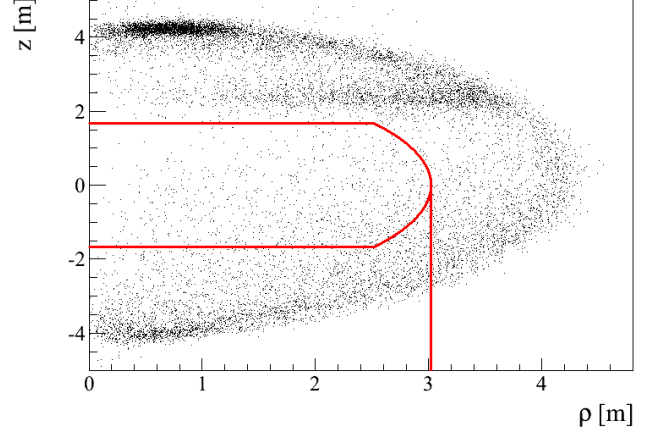


FIG. 22. Spatial distribution of the  $^{214}\text{Po}$  events (from  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  -  $^{214}\text{Po}$  coincidences) in the  $z$  -  $\rho$  plane from May 2007 to May 2010. The solid red line indicates the FV used in the  $^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  analysis. The layer of events in the upper hemisphere is outside this volume and corresponds to the increased rate of radon at the beginning of data taking (see Fig. 21).

#### XI.3.7. $^{210}\text{Bi}$

$^{210}\text{Bi}$  is a  $\beta$ -emitting daughter of  $^{210}\text{Pb}$  with 7.23 days mean-life and  $Q$ -value of 1160 keV. Its spectrum spanning through the energy range of interest for  $^7\text{Be}$ , *pep*, and CNO- $\nu$ 's does not exhibit any specific signature, except its spectral shape, that would help its identification. Therefore,  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  contamination can be measured only through the spectral fit.

At the start of data taking, following the initial filling of the detector, the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  rate was measured as  $(10 \pm 6)$  cpd/100 ton. However, over time, the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  contamination has been steadily increasing and at the start of May 2010 the rate was  $\simeq 75$  cpd/100 ton. The reason for this increase is currently not fully understood but it seems correlated with operations performed on the detector. Figure 23 shows the count rate stability in the FV used for the  $^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  annual modulation analysis (Table VI) and in the energy region  $385 < N_{pe}^d < 450$  which is dominated by the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$ . The time behavior of this count rate  $R(t)$  is reasonably described by the sum of a constant background term  $R_0$  and an exponentially increasing term:

$$R(t) = R_0 + R_{\text{Bi}} e^{\Lambda_{\text{Bi}} t} \quad (22)$$

This variable background is a major concern for the annual modulation analysis and it will be thoroughly discussed in Section XXIV. On the contrary, the  $^7\text{Be}$  and *pep*-CNO neutrino interaction rate analyses are only sensible to the mean value of the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  rate and not to its relative time variations.

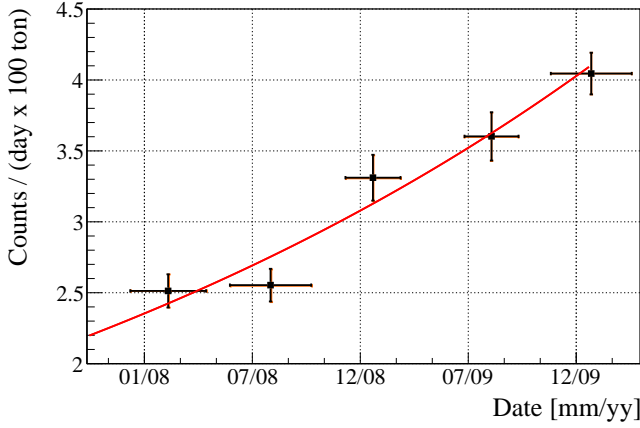


FIG. 23. Count rate  $R(t)$  in the energy region from  $390 < N_{pe}^d < 450$  in the FV used for the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  annual modulation analysis from the beginning of the year 2008 until the middle of year 2010. This region is dominated by the  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$  contribution. The red line is a fit according to Eq. 22.

#### XI.3.8. ${}^{210}\text{Po}$

${}^{210}\text{Po}$  is after  ${}^{14}\text{C}$  the most abundant component of the detected spectrum. It is a mono-energetic 5300 keV  $\alpha$ -emitter (200 days mean-life) but the strong ionization quenching of the scintillator (see Section VII) brings its spectrum within the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  energy region. Even though it is a direct daughter of  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$ , the rate of  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  was about 800 times higher than that of  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$  at the start of data-taking. This high rate (out of equilibrium with the rest of the  ${}^{238}\text{U}$ -decay chain) may be due to  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  washing off the surfaces of the scintillator storage tanks and pipes. The identification of  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  in the liquid scintillator was one of the major CTF breakthroughs [27]. The pulse-shape discrimination is very effective in reducing this background component, as we will show in Section XIV. The  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  rate is easily measured since its high rate originates a peak clearly identified in the energy spectrum around  $N_p \simeq N_h \simeq 190$  or  $N_{pe} \simeq N_{pe}^d \simeq 210$  and fitted with a Gaussian or a Gamma function (see Section XVII).

Figure 24 shows the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  count rate in the  ${}^7\text{Be}$ -FV as a function of time. The various sudden increases of the count rate are related to the IV refilling operations described in Section II.1 or due to the tests of the purification procedures which were applied on the whole scintillator volume after the completion of the physics program described in this paper (Section XXVIII). The spatial distribution of the events in the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  energy region shows a significant non-uniformity, further perturbed by the detector operations and mixing. Figure 25 shows the  $z$ -distribution of the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  events in four different periods separated by short periods of IV refilling, indicated by the vertical lines in Fig. 24. This instability and non-uniformity does not have any significant effect on the solar neutrino rate analysis, while in the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  annual

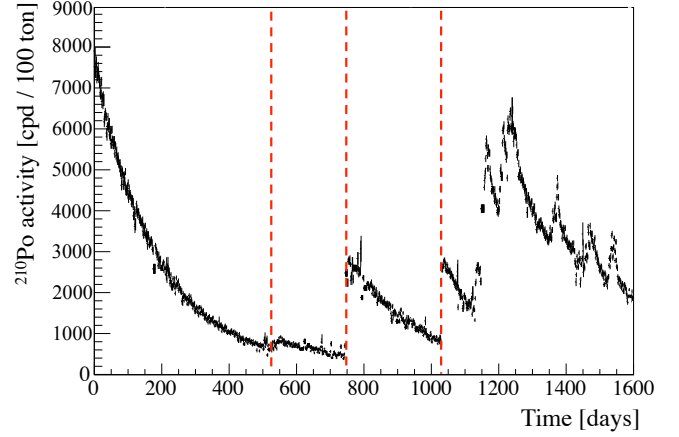


FIG. 24.  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  count rate in the FV used in the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  rate analysis as a function of time. The various increases are due to the IV-filling operations shown by the three vertical lines (Section II.1) and due to the tests of the purification methods (details in text).

modulation study (Section XXIV) pulse-shape discrimination techniques are used to fight this problem.

#### XI.3.9. ${}^{232}\text{Th}$ chain

The primordial isotope  ${}^{232}\text{Th}$  has a mean-life of 20.3 billion years and 100% abundance in natural Th. The main decay branches of the  ${}^{232}\text{Th}$  include six  $\alpha$  and four  $\beta$  decays. The fast decay sequence of  ${}^{212}\text{Bi} - {}^{212}\text{Po}$ :

$${}^{212}\text{Bi} \rightarrow {}^{212}\text{Po} + e^- + \bar{\nu}_e \quad (23)$$

$${}^{212}\text{Po} \rightarrow {}^{208}\text{Pb} + \alpha, \quad (24)$$

with  $\tau = 433$  ns (Eq. 24) allows to estimate the  ${}^{220}\text{Rn}$  content of the scintillator and to infer the  ${}^{232}\text{Th}$  contamination.

The  ${}^{212}\text{Bi}$  is a  $\beta$ -emitter with  $Q = 2252$  keV, while the  $\alpha$  of  ${}^{212}\text{Po}$  decay has 8955 keV energy. The thoron rate in the  ${}^7\text{Be}$ -FV is not constant in time and it changes as a consequence of the operations on the detector. Again, no time persistent contamination is introduced since we observe that the  ${}^{212}\text{Bi} - {}^{212}\text{Po}$  rate recovers the initial value within a few days (the longest living isotope among thoron daughters is  ${}^{212}\text{Pb}$  with  $\tau = 15.4$  hours). The intrinsic contamination of  ${}^{232}\text{Th}$  in secular equilibrium has been measured from the  ${}^{212}\text{Bi} - {}^{212}\text{Po}$  asymptotic rate.

The  ${}^{212}\text{Bi} - {}^{212}\text{Po}$  events are selected within gates having two clusters surviving the muon cut, reconstructed with a distance of 1 m, having a time delay between 400 ns and 1732 ns (four times the life-time of the decay). The 400 ns value ensures that the efficiency of the clustering



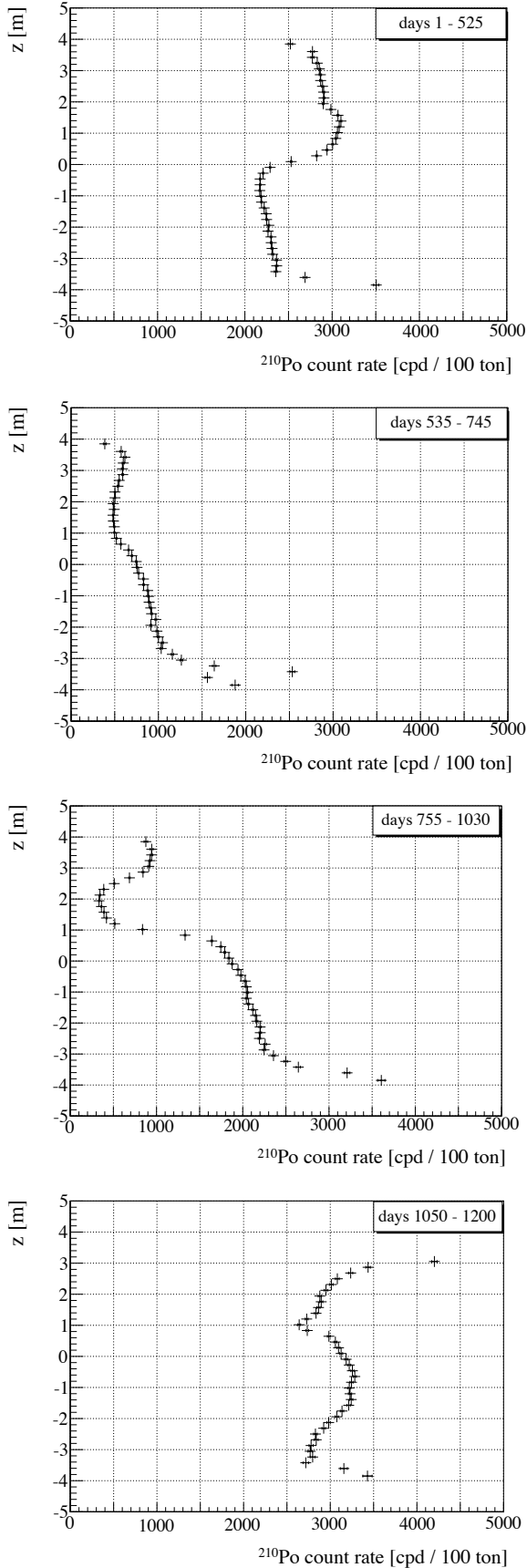


FIG. 25.  $^{210}\text{Po}$  count rate as a function of the vertical position  $z$ . The four plots represent the four periods separated by the IV-filling campaigns shown by the vertical lines in Fig. 24.

Isotope	Mean Life	Energy [keV]	Decay
$^{232}\text{Th}$	$2.03 \times 10^{10}$ yrs	4010	$\alpha$
$^{228}\text{Ra}$	8.31 yrs	46	$\beta^- \gamma$
$^{228}\text{Ac}$	8.84 hrs	2140	$\beta^- \gamma$
$^{228}\text{Th}$	2.76 yrs	5520	$\alpha$
$^{224}\text{Ra}$	5.28 days	5690	$\alpha$
$^{220}\text{Rn}$	80.2 s	6290	$\alpha$
$^{216}\text{Po}$	209 ms	6780	$\alpha$
$^{212}\text{Pb}$	15.3 hrs	573	$\beta^- \gamma$
$^{212}\text{Bi}(64\%)$	87.4 min	2250	$\beta^-$
$^{212}\text{Bi}(36\%)$	87.4 min	6050	$\alpha$
$^{212}\text{Po}$	431 ns	8780	$\alpha$
$^{208}\text{Tl}$	4.40 min	4990	$\beta^- \gamma$

TABLE X. The  $^{232}\text{Th}$  decay chain showing isotopes, life-times, maximum released energies and type of decay. A large number of  $\gamma$  line accompanying many of the decays are not reported in the table.

algorithm may be safely assumed to be 100% at the energies of interest.

The energy region of the first candidate is selected to be  $<2000$  keV and that of the second one is required to lie in the interval 900 - 1300 keV. The cut efficiency is 34%. The mean counting rate of the events reconstructed within a sphere of 3.3 m radius during periods far from any detector operations (611 days of life-time) is  $(0.13 \pm 0.03)$  cpd/100 ton which corresponds to a scintillator  $^{232}\text{Th}$  contamination of  $(3.8 \pm 0.8) \times 10^{-18}$  g/g at equilibrium, 20 times lower than the target design.

The spatial distribution of the events reported in Fig. 26 indicates the presence of a contamination located close to the IV and higher than the bulk one. The higher rate at the bottom of the detector could suggest particulate deposition. By decreasing the low-energy cut on the  $^{212}\text{Bi}$  charge to  $N_{pe}=200$  it is possible to study the thoron emanation from the vessel: the typical counting rate is  $\sim 5$  cpd. Given the short thoron life-time ( $\tau = 80.6$  s), practically it does not penetrate deeply inside the scintillator, so the  $^{212}\text{Bi} - ^{212}\text{Po}$  spatial distribution reproduces very closely the vessel shape.

#### XI.4. Cosmic muons and cosmogenic background

The dominant muon-induced cosmogenic background in Borexino,  $^{11}\text{C}$ , represents the biggest challenge for the measurement of  $pep$  and CNO neutrinos. About 95% of this nuclide is produced by muons through a reaction resulting in the emission of free neutrons [54]:

$$\mu + ^{12}\text{C} \rightarrow \mu + ^{11}\text{C} + n. \quad (25)$$

$^{11}\text{C}$  decays with a mean-life  $\tau = 29.4$  min via positron emission:

$$^{11}\text{C} \rightarrow ^{11}\text{B} + e^+ + \nu_e. \quad (26)$$

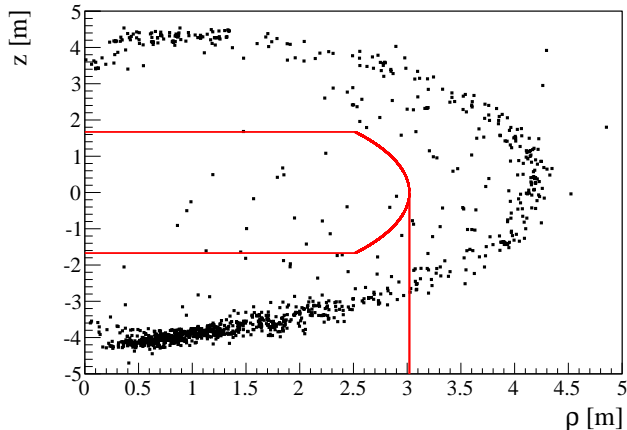


FIG. 26. Distribution of the  $^{212}\text{Po}$  events (from  $^{212}\text{Bi} - ^{212}\text{Po}$  coincidences) in the  $z - \rho$  plane from May 2007 to May 2010. The solid red line indicates the FV used in the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  analysis.

The total energy released in the detector is between 1020 and 1980 keV ( $\beta^+$  with  $Q$ -value of 960 keV plus  $2 \times 511$  keV  $\gamma$ -rays from  $e^+$  annihilation) and lies in the energy region of interest for the detection of electron recoils from *pep* and CNO neutrinos. In the Borexino scintillator, the neutrons produced in association with  $^{11}\text{C}$  (see Eq. 25) are captured with a mean life-time of  $(254.5 \pm 1.8) \mu\text{s}$  [25]) on hydrogen, emitting characteristic 2230 keV  $\gamma$  rays.

The muon flux in Borexino is reduced by about a factor of  $10^6$  compared to the sea level thanks to its location deep underground in the Gran Sasso laboratory. It amounts to  $1.2 \text{ muons } m^{-2} \text{ hour}^{-1}$  [25]. The interaction of these residual muons with  $^{12}\text{C}$  is expected to produce few tens of  $^{11}\text{C}$  nuclei per day in the FV. The continuous cosmogenic production and the short  $^{11}\text{C}$  mean-life originate an equilibrium concentration of  $^{11}\text{C}$  that cannot be reduced by any purification procedure. On the other hand,  $^{11}\text{C}$  tagging through its spatial and time coincidence with muons and captured neutrons, together with pulse-shape discrimination are powerful methods to reduce its contribution, as described in Section XV.

Table XI shows other isotopes produced cosmogenically within the detector. Their importance is suppressed since we veto all the detector for 300 ms after each muon as described in Section XIII; the last column shows the residual rate after this cut. These background sources are relevant only for the *pep* and CNO neutrino analysis. The differential rates in this table show that only  $^6\text{He}$  has a value that is greater than 5% of the *pep* signal rate and, therefore, it has been included in the fit (see Section XXV). A special treatment is required for  $^{10}\text{C}$ : even though its starting point at 1740 keV is past the *pep* neutrinos energy, its count rate of  $(0.54 \pm 0.04) \text{ cpd}/100 \text{ ton}$  is relatively high and a large fraction of its spectrum falls within the fit region ( $< 3200 \text{ keV}$ ). The 480 keV  $\gamma$ -line from  $^7\text{Be}$  EC decay, on the other hand, is negligible with

respect to the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$ ,  $^{210}\text{Bi}$ , and  $^7\text{Be}$  solar neutrino recoil spectra ( $\sim 0.150 \text{ cpd}/100 \text{ ton/keV}$ ) and can safely be excluded from the fit, even if its total count rate is comparable to that of  $^{10}\text{C}$  and  $^6\text{He}$ .

Cosmogenic backgrounds originating from outside the detector and from untagged muons are expected to be smaller than those presented in Table XI. In fact, untagged muons that pass all the standard and FV-volume cuts and enter into the final spectrum used for the measurement of the interaction rate of the  $^7\text{Be}$  neutrinos have an expected rate  $< 3 \times 10^{-4} \text{ cpd}/100 \text{ ton}$  (considering the OD absolute efficiency of 99.2% and independence between ID and OD muon flags [25]). Except for neutrons, none of the other cosmogenic isotopes can travel very far away from the muon shower and, therefore, all of their decays in the FV will be preceded by the muon shower in the scintillator, for which the tagging efficiency is highest ( $> 99.992\%$  [25]). There is a possibility though, that neutrons produced outside the IV will deposit energy within the FV. Those that are captured in the IV may be vetoed by the fast coincidence condition, as proton recoils from the thermalization will be visible near the capture position. Another possible background is from proton recoils due to fast neutrons from untagged muons that do not cross the IV, where the neutron is not captured in the scintillator, and the reconstructed position of the recoils is within a reduced FV. We have studied carefully the background induced by fast neutrons [56] for the geo-neutrino (antineutrinos of geo-physical origin) analysis. The limit of  $< 1.4 \cdot 10^{-4} \text{ cpd}/100 \text{ ton}$  set there allows to conclude that the expected background due to proton recoils is negligible for all analysis presented in this paper. Furthermore, any surviving proton-recoil signal would be subtracted from the final spectrum due to their  $\alpha$ -like pulse-shape.

## XII. SHAPE VARIABLES AND EVENT QUALITY ESTIMATORS

The time distribution of the photons emitted by the scintillator depends on the details of the energy loss, which in turn depend on the particle type, as was described in Section VII. It is therefore possible to define shape variables that can either efficiently distinguish noise events from point-like scintillation events or disentangle different particle types. In this section we define such variables which are then applied in the event selection procedure described in Section XIII.

- The “Gatti” parameter ( $G$ )

The Gatti filter [57–59] allows to separate two classes of events with different but known time distributions of the detected light. It is used to perform  $\alpha/\beta$  discrimination and also to separate  $\beta^+/\beta^-$  events. For the two classes of events under examination, normalized reference shapes  $P_1(t)$  and  $P_2(t)$  are created by averaging the time distributions of large sample of events selected without any use of pulse-shape variables. For example,

Isotope	Mean Life	Energy [keV]	Decay [cpd/100 ton]	Residual rate
n	255 $\mu$ s	2230	Capture $\gamma$ on $^1\text{H}$	$< 0.005$
$^{12}\text{N}$	15.9 ms	17300	$\beta^+$	$< 5 \times 10^{-5}$
$^{13}\text{B}$	25.0 ms	13400	$\beta^-\gamma$	$< 5 \times 10^{-5}$
$^{12}\text{B}$	29.1 ms	13400	$\beta^-$	$(7.1 \pm 0.2) \times 10^{-5}$
$^8\text{He}$	171.7 ms	10700	$\beta^-\gamma n$	$0.004 \pm 0.002$
$^9\text{C}$	182.5 ms	16500	$\beta^+$	$0.020 \pm 0.006$
$^9\text{Li}$	257.2 ms	13600	$\beta^-\gamma n$	$0.022 \pm 0.002$
$^8\text{B}$	1.11 s	18000	$\beta^+\alpha$	$0.21 \pm 0.05$
$^6\text{He}$	1.16 s	3510	$\beta^-$	$0.31 \pm 0.04$
$^8\text{Li}$	1.21 s	16000	$\beta^-\alpha$	$0.31 \pm 0.05$
$^{11}\text{Be}$	19.9 s	11500	$\beta^-$	$0.034 \pm 0.006$
$^{10}\text{C}$	27.8 s	3650	$\beta^+\gamma$	$0.54 \pm 0.04$
$^7\text{Be}$	76.9 days	478	EC $\gamma$	$0.36 \pm 0.05$

TABLE XI. Cosmogenic isotopes in Borexino. The last column shows the expected residual rate after the 300 ms time veto after each muon passing through ID is applied (see Section XIII). The total rates have been evaluated following [10] or extrapolating simulations reported in [55].

in case of  $\alpha/\beta$  selection, the  $^{214}\text{Bi} - ^{214}\text{Po}$  coincidences are used to select clean samples of  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  events. The functions  $P_1(t)$  and  $P_2(t)$  represent the probability that a photoelectron is detected at the time between  $t$  and  $(t + dt)$  for events of classes 1 or 2, respectively. The reference shape is binned for an easy comparison with the data, obtaining  $r_1(t_n)$  and  $r_2(t_n)$

$$r_{12}(t_n) = \int_{t_0+n\Delta t}^{t_0+(n+1)\Delta t} P_{12}(t)dt, \quad (27)$$

where  $n$  is the bin number,  $t_0$  is a reference point of the time distribution (either the beginning of the cluster or the position of the maximum), and  $\Delta t$  is the bin width.

If we call  $e(t_n)$  the distribution of the measured binned time distribution for a generic event, then the Gatti parameter  $G$  is defined as

$$G = \sum_n e(t_n)w(t_n), \quad (28)$$

where  $w(t_n)$  are weights given by

$$w(t_n) = \frac{r_1(t_n) - r_2(t_n)}{r_1(t_n) + r_2(t_n)}. \quad (29)$$

The  $G$  parameter follows a probability distribution with the mean value  $\bar{G}_i$  that depends on particle type:

$$\bar{G}_i = \sum_n r_i(t_n)w(t_n). \quad (30)$$

In the scintillator used by Borexino,  $\alpha$  pulses are slower and have therefore a longer tail with respect to  $\beta/\gamma$  pulses. The reference shapes  $r_\alpha(t_n)$  and  $r_\beta(t_n)$  (obtained from  $^{214}\text{Bi}(\beta) - ^{214}\text{Po}(\alpha)$  coincidences), are

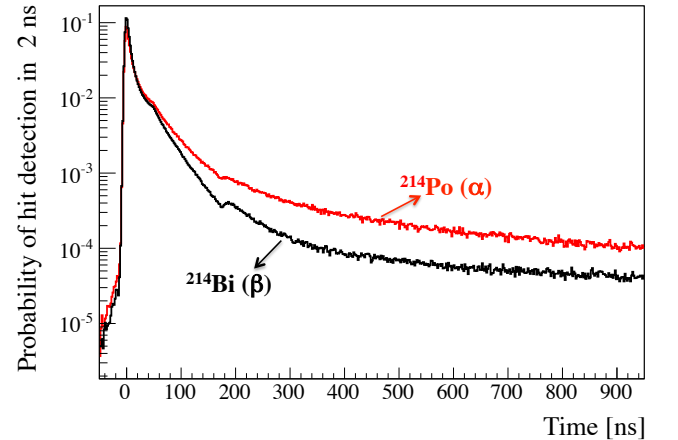


FIG. 27. The reference  $r_\alpha(t_n)$  (red) and  $r_\beta(t_n)$  (black) pulse shapes obtained by tagging the radon-correlated  $^{214}\text{Bi} - ^{214}\text{Po}$  coincidences. The dip at 180 ns is due to the dead time on every individual electronic channel applied after each detected hit (see Section VI). The small shoulder around 60 ns is due to the light reflected on the SSS surface and on the PMTs' cathodes.

shown in Fig. 27, while the distributions of the corresponding  $G$  parameters ( $G_\alpha$  and  $G_\beta$ ) are shown in Fig. 28. The large separation between the  $G_\alpha$  and  $G_\beta$  distributions is due to different weight of the delayed scintillation light for  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  particles that is summarized in Table III. To enhance the sensitivity to this delayed light, the time duration of the event has been fixed to  $1.5 \mu\text{s}$  starting from the time of the first hit generating the trigger. The variance of the distributions of  $G_\alpha$  and  $G_\beta$  depends on the energy and it slightly increases as the energy decreases thus reducing the dis-

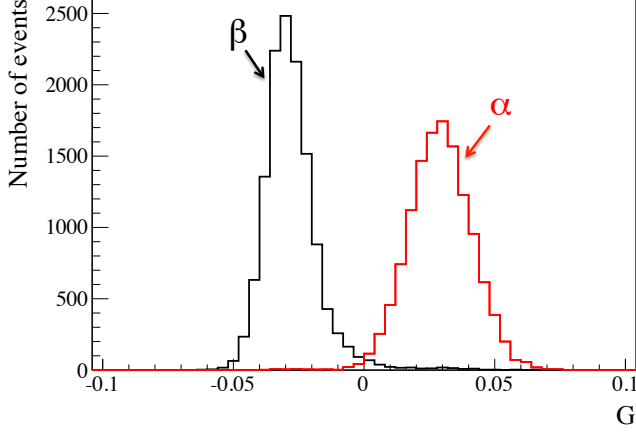


FIG. 28. The distribution of  $G_\alpha$  (red) and  $G_\beta$  (black) (see Eq. 28) for events obtained by tagging the radon correlated  $^{214}\text{Bi}$ - $^{214}\text{Po}$  coincidences.

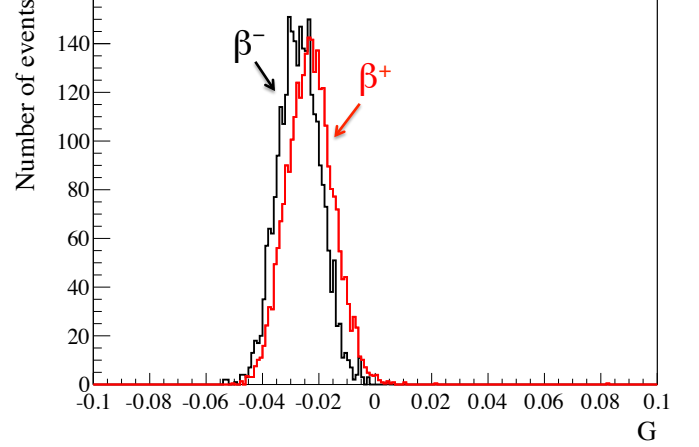


FIG. 29. The distribution of the  $G_\beta^-$  parameter (black) obtained from  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  ( $\beta^-$ ) events and of the  $G_\beta^+$  parameter (red) obtained from  $^{11}\text{C}$  ( $\beta^+$ ) events.

crimination power. However this fact is important only for energy deposit lower than that considered in the analysis reported here. We have in any accounted for this effect in the  $\alpha$   $\beta$  statistical subtraction (discussed in Section XIV) procedure by considering the variance of the  $G_\alpha$  and  $G_\beta$  distributions as free fit parameters when using the analytical approach. The Monte Carlo simulation reproduces the effect.

Similarly, as will be discussed in Section XV.2, we have built a  $G$  parameter to discriminate between  $\beta^+$  and  $\beta^-$  (called  $G_{\beta+}$  and  $G_{\beta-}$ ) events using as  $\beta^-$  reference the time distribution of  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  and for  $\beta^+$  a sample of  $^{11}\text{C}$  events tagged with the TFC method (described in Section XV.1). The  $G_{\beta+}$  and  $G_{\beta-}$  distributions are shown in Fig. 29. The separation between the  $G_{\beta+}$  and  $G_{\beta-}$  distributions is small, since it is mostly due to the delay in the scintillation introduced in case of  $\beta^+$  because of the formation of positronium and its survival time in the scintillator before annihilation. This time, as it will be discussed in detail in Section XV.1, is of the order of only few ns.

- Anisotropy variables  $\beta_l$  and  $S_p$

Noise events with anisotropic hit distributions are rejected by characterizing the distribution of observed hits with respect to the reconstructed position. For localized energy deposits, such as neutrino-induced scattered electrons or  $\beta$ -decays, the scintillation light is emitted isotropically from the interaction point, while for noise events the detected hit-time distribution is likely to be anisotropic. Two different variables describing the event isotropy,  $\beta_l$  and  $S_p$ , are defined.

$\beta_l$ : first, the number of photoelectrons detected on each PMT is estimated by rounding the detected charge, normalized by the corresponding single photoelectron mean, to the nearest integer. Then, for every pair of photoelectrons  $i$  and  $j$ , the angle  $\theta_{ij}$ , between the corresponding PMTs is calculated with respect to the re-

constructed position of the event. We sum up the Legendre polynomials  $P_l(\cos(\theta_{ij}))$  for each of the pairs, to obtain the anisotropy parameter  $\beta_l$ :

$$\beta_l \equiv \frac{2}{N(N+1)} \sum_{i=0}^N \sum_{j=i+1}^N P_l(\cos(\theta_{ij})), \quad (31)$$

where  $N$  is the total number of photoelectrons and the sum runs over each pair of detected photoelectrons (estimated as described above).

$S_p$ : the  $\cos(\theta)$  and  $\phi$  angular distribution of the detected light is computed with respect to the reconstructed position and developed in a series of “spherical harmonic”:

$$Y_l^m(\theta, \phi) = \frac{2\sqrt{\pi}}{N_h} e^{im\phi} P_l^m(\cos \theta), \quad (32)$$

with  $m = -1, 0, 1$  and  $P_l^m$  the associated Legendre polynomials, and  $N_h$  is the total number of detected hits. Three complex coefficients  $S_m$  are calculated as:

$$S_m = \sum_{i=1}^{N_h} Y_1^m(\theta_i, \phi_i), \quad (33)$$

where the index  $i$  runs on the hits in the cluster while  $\theta_i$  and  $\phi_i$  are the spherical coordinates of the hit PMT in a reference frame centered in the reconstructed vertex. We define the  $S_p$  variable as:

$$S_p = |S_0| + |S_1| + |S_{-1}|. \quad (34)$$

- $N_{peak}$  variable

The scintillation pulse shape due to an interaction of a single particle features only a single maximum. A dedicated algorithm was developed for identifying the

number of peaks within the time distribution of detected hits. Fig. 30 shows an example of an event for which  $N_{peak}$  variable is 2, most probably due to pile-up of two distinct interactions occurring in a time window that was too short to be recognized as two separate clusters.

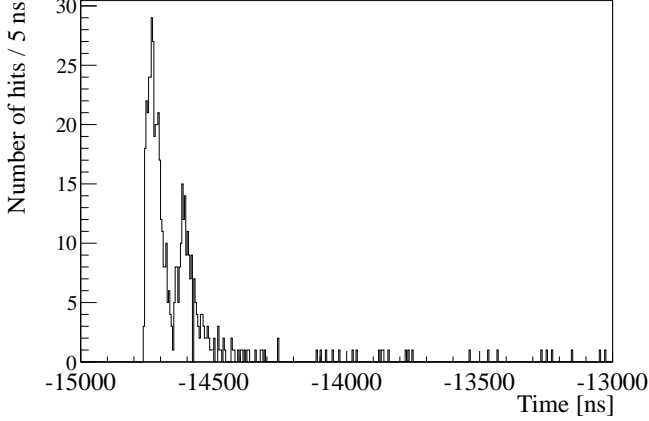


FIG. 30. Example of an event with  $N_{peak} = 2$ . The horizontal axis shows the time difference of each hit with respect to trigger signal, so the absolute values have no physical meaning.

- $R_{pe}$  variable

The different energy estimators introduced in Section IX are correlated. Once  $N_p$  is known then the expected charge variable  $N_{pe}^{exp}$  can be expressed as:

$$N_{pe}^{exp} = \frac{-N_{tot} \cdot \ln\left(1 - \frac{N_p}{N_{tot}}\right)}{\left(1 + g_C \ln\left(1 - \frac{N_p}{N_{tot}}\right)\right)}, \quad (35)$$

where  $g_C$  is a geometrical correction factor defined in Eq. 68. Its value depends on the choice of the fiducial volume and it is typically about 0.11. The  $R_{pe}$  variable is defined as a ratio of the measured and expected charge:

$$R_{pe} = \frac{N_{pe}}{N_{pe}^{exp}}. \quad (36)$$

- $R_q$  variable

In order to identify events that have an abnormally large number of hits with invalid charge, we define the variable  $R_q$ :

$$R_q = \frac{N_{pe}}{N_{pe-avg}}. \quad (37)$$

We expect  $R_q$  to be approximately equal to 1 for normal scintillation events,

- $f_{rack}$  variable

One of the common sources of noise events during data taking is electronic noise from a single electronics rack

(corresponding to 160 channels) [20]. If several PMTs detect some noise signal then the main trigger may fire. In order to discriminate against this type of triggers, for each event we keep track of the total fraction of hits that are recorded on the most active crate,  $f_{rack}$ .

### XIII. THE EVENT SELECTION AND CUT EFFICIENCY

This section is devoted to the selection of the  ${}^7\text{Be}$ ,  $pep$  and CNO solar neutrino events. Solar neutrino events cannot be distinguished from background events. However, a series of cuts applied on an event-by-event basis has been developed with the aim to remove taggable backgrounds and non-physical events. A set of these cuts is described in Section XIII.1, while the FV cut has been already discussed in Section XI. Many of these cuts are correlated. We report therefore in Section XIII.2 the overall efficiency of the whole chain of cuts.

In order to obtain the spectra used for solar neutrino analysis, first, the set of selection cuts as described in Section XIII.1 is applied. Afterwards, two different ways of exploiting the pulse-shape capability of the scintillator, based on the use of  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  parameter, are applied. In the first approach, the discrimination is applied on an event-by-event basis and is described in Section XIII.3. This energy dependent cut is used to eliminate a small fraction of non-physical events with  $\alpha$ -like character and therefore it unavoidably removes also some part of real  $\alpha$  particles. The second approach, where the  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  contributions are separated statistically and not on an event-by-event basis, is described in a separate Section XIV. The cut described in Section XIII.3 is not applied in this statistical approach in order not to deform the  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  distributions. A special use of the  $G_{\beta-}$  and  $G_{\beta+}$  parameters in the process of  ${}^{11}\text{C}$  subtraction in the  $pep$  and CNO neutrino analysis is described in Section XV.

#### XIII.1. Event selection

- *Muon and muon-daughter removal*

There are about  $\sim 4300$  muons/day crossing the ID. The events due to muons must be identified and removed in particular when, due to geometrical effects, their energy deposit is so small that they may fall into the energy region interesting for the solar neutrino detection; moreover the identification of muons is important for tagging possible cosmogenic radioisotopes produced by their interaction in (or around) the scintillator. Here we give a brief overview of muon tagging methods, while a full description is given in [25].

Muons passing the water shield in WT produce Cherenkov light causing the OD to trigger (Muon Trigger Flag, MTF). The Cherenkov light is identified as a cluster of hits within the data taken from the OD PMTs (Muon Cluster Flag, MCR). Muons passing through ID, produce a distinct pulse shape different

from point-like scintillation events and can be therefore identified by pulse-shape analysis (Inner Detector Flag, IDF). Events identified as muons by either of these three flags are excluded from the analysis. Muons passing the scintillator or buffer region (ID- $\mu$ 's) can be detected by any flag but a presence of a cluster of hits within the data taken from the ID PMTs is required. Since ID- $\mu$ 's produce a large amount of light often saturating the electronics, the whole detector is vetoed for 300 ms after each of them. This time is sufficient to suppress cosmogenic neutrons (captured with a mean life-time of  $(254.5 \pm 1.8) \mu\text{s}$  [25]) and other relevant spallation products as well. Muons passing through the OD only (OD- $\mu$ 's) are identified by either MTB or MCR flags, they do not produce a cluster of hits within the ID data, and they do not saturate the electronics. In this case, only cosmogenic neutrons can penetrate through the SSS from the OD to the ID volume and a 2 ms veto is sufficient. The total live-time reduction introduced by all these cuts is 1.6%.

- *Single energy deposit requirement*

Accepted events are required to correspond to a single energy deposit within the DAQ gate ( $16 \mu\text{s}$  long). If the clustering algorithm (Section VI) does not identify any cluster or identifies multiple clusters, the event is rejected. The clustering algorithm can recognize two physical events as two separate clusters if their time separation is more than  $\sim 230 \text{ ns}$ . The pile-up of events occurring within shorter time intervals can be identified by  $N_{\text{peak}}$  variable (Section XII) greater than one. Therefore,  $N_{\text{peak}}=1$  is requested, which is also a powerful tool for removal of irregular noise signals often featuring several peaks in the hit-time distributions.

- *Removal of coincident events*

All events reconstructed with mutual distance smaller than 1.5 m and occurring in a 2 ms time window are rejected. This cut removes a small part of uncorrelated events (Section XIII.2), while it removes sequences of noise events and possible correlated events of unknown origin. This cut removes radon correlated  $^{214}\text{Bi} - ^{214}\text{Po}$  delayed coincidences as well.

During the normal data acquisition, several calibration events (pulser, laser, and random triggers, see Section VI) are regularly generated by interrupts based on a 200 Hz clock [20]. If a physical event occurs in a coincidence with such an interrupt, the event is rejected, since it might be read incompletely or might contain calibration hits as well.

- *Quality control of the  $N_{pe}$  variable*

The quality of the charge variable  $N_{pe}$  (Section IX) of individual events is checked in two independent ways:

- i) The  $R_{pe}$  variable (Eq. 36) has to be within the interval from 0.6 to 1.6.
  - ii) The  $R_q$  variable (Eq. 37) has to be more than 0.5.
- Both these conditions are also a powerful tool for noise suppression.

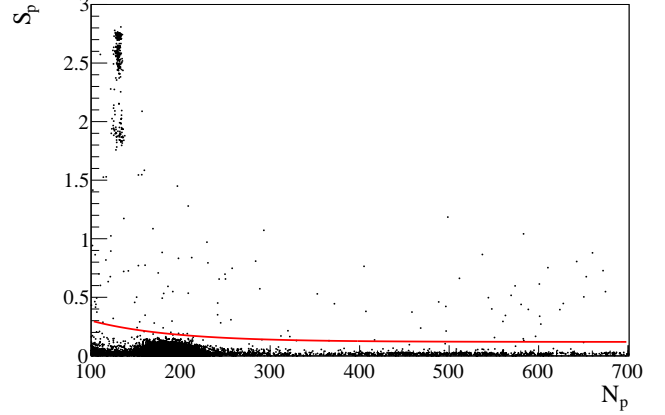


FIG. 31. An example of the application of the  $S_p$  energy-dependent cut (see Eq. 39) indicated by the solid red line on a sample of events which are not tagged as muons and which are reconstructed in the  $^7\text{Be}$ -FV. The events having the  $S_p$  variable above the value indicated by the line are excluded from the data set. Clearly, the cluster at energies of  $N_p \sim 130$  with  $S_p > 1.7$  is due to anisotropic noise events.

- *Isotropy control*

Additional noise events are further rejected by requiring that the detected scintillation light is isotropically emitted around the interaction point. This is guaranteed by these two independent conditions:

- i) The variable  $\beta_l$  (Eq. 31) has to satisfy:

$$\beta_1 < 0.027 + \exp(-1.306 - 0.017N_{pe}) + \exp(-3.199 - 0.002N_{pe}). \quad (38)$$

- ii) The  $S_p$  variable (Eq. 34) has to be below an energy-dependent threshold:

$$S_p < 0.119 + \exp(12.357 - 0.305N_p) + \exp(-0.612 - 0.011N_p). \quad (39)$$

Figure 31 demonstrates application of this cut on a sample of events which are not tagged as muons and which are reconstructed in the  $^7\text{Be}$ -FV.

- *Additional noise removal*

The cluster which caused the trigger generation has a well defined position within the DAQ gate. The *rms* of the distribution of the cluster start time is  $\sim 55 \text{ ns}$  and features some tails. An event is accepted only if its cluster starts within a conservative  $1.7 \mu\text{s}$  wide time window which has a fixed position in the DAQ gate.

Additionally, all events for which  $f_{\text{rack}} > 0.75$  (Section XII) are rejected.

The effect of these selection cuts is shown in Fig. 32 with the choice of the  $^7\text{Be}$ -FV. The final spectra of events passing all the selection cuts are shown for three energy estimators  $N_p$ ,  $N_h$ , and  $N_{pe}$  (Section IX) in Fig. 33. As it was anticipated in Section IX, the  $N_p$  and  $N_h$  spectra



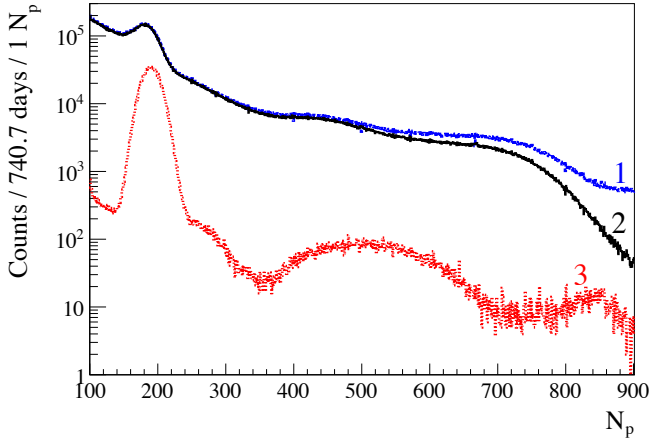


FIG. 32. Effect of selection cuts on the raw spectrum in the  $N_p$  variable (marked 1 and shown in blue). The black spectrum (marked 2) shows the effect of the muon and muon daughter cut. The shape of the final  $N_p$  spectrum (marked 3 and shown in red) is dominated by the effect of the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  FV cut. The effect of other cuts described in Section XIII.1 is important at the level of fit, but cannot be appreciated visually.

are very similar (but identical) in the energy region of interest since the probability of multiple hits on the same PMT is small. The comparison of Fig. 33 and Fig. 20 allows to identify the main contribution in the spectrum: the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  peak is well visible around  $190 N_p$  and  ${}^{11}\text{C}$  is easily identified in the region between  $\sim 380$  and  $700 N_p$ . The shoulder of the electron-recoil spectrum due to  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$ 's is visible in the region  $N_p \simeq 250 - 350$ . In the low-energy region ( $N_p \leq 100$ ) the count rate is dominated by the  ${}^{14}\text{C}$ .

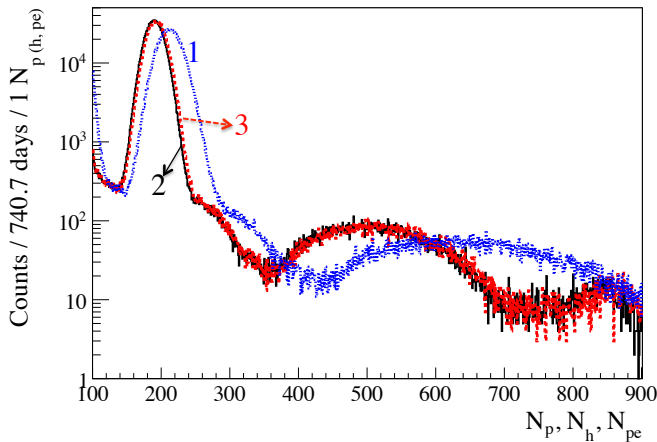


FIG. 33. Final spectra for all events in the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  FV passing all selection cuts, shown in three different energy estimators:  $N_{pe}$  (1-dotted blue),  $N_p$  (2-solid black), and  $N_h$  (3-dashed red).

Isotope	$(x,y,z)$	Energy [m]	Fraction of events removed
${}^{203}\text{Hg}$	(0,0,0)	279	$(4.03 \pm 0.76) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{203}\text{Hg}$	(0,0,3)	279	$(5.84 \pm 1.76) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{203}\text{Hg}$	(0,0,-3)	279	$(5.25 \pm 1.75) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{85}\text{Sr}$	(0,0,0)	514	$(2.94 \pm 1.11) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{85}\text{Sr}$	(0,0,3)	514	$(1.08 \pm 0.36) \times 10^{-3}$
${}^{85}\text{Sr}$	(0,0,-3)	514	$(1.12 \pm 0.37) \times 10^{-3}$
${}^{54}\text{Mn}$	(0,0,0)	834	$(1.65 \pm 0.40) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{54}\text{Mn}$	(0,0,3)	834	$(1.01 \pm 0.71) \times 10^{-3}$
${}^{54}\text{Mn}$	(0,0,-3)	834	$(3.91 \pm 1.05) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{65}\text{Zn}$	(0,0,0)	1115	$(3.79 \pm 1.69) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{65}\text{Zn}$	(0,0,3)	1115	$(2.11 \pm 2.11) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{65}\text{Zn}$	(0,0,-3)	1115	$(1.87 \pm 0.62) \times 10^{-3}$
${}^{40}\text{K}$	(0,0,0)	1460	$(1.89 \pm 0.50) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{40}\text{K}$	(0,0,3)	1460	$(3.82 \pm 1.27) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{40}\text{K}$	(0,0,-3)	1460	$(1.54 \pm 0.24) \times 10^{-3}$

TABLE XII. Fraction of  $\gamma$  events from radioactive sources removed by the set of selection cuts described in Section XIII.1. The typical number of source events used for this analysis is of the order of  $10^5$  events. The typical count rate due to the source is of few Bq.

### XIII.2. Cut efficiency

The overall efficiency of the chain of cuts has been studied both with Monte Carlo simulations and with the radioactive-source calibration data.

Figure 34 compares the energy spectra of  ${}^{203}\text{Hg}$ ,  ${}^{85}\text{Sr}$ ,  ${}^{54}\text{Mn}$ ,  ${}^{65}\text{Zn}$ , and  ${}^{40}\text{K}$   $\gamma$  sources with respect to the energy

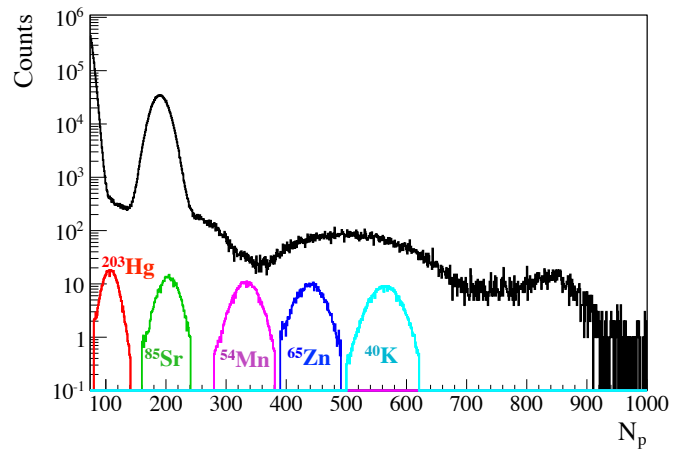


FIG. 34. Final spectrum for all events passing all selection cuts is shown in  $N_p$  variable (black) with respect to the  $\gamma$ -sources calibration spectra:  ${}^{203}\text{Hg}$  (red),  ${}^{85}\text{Sr}$  (green),  ${}^{54}\text{Mn}$  (magenta),  ${}^{65}\text{Zn}$  (blue), and  ${}^{40}\text{K}$  (cyan). The calibration peaks are all normalized to an area of 500.

Spectrum	Fraction of removed events
${}^7\text{Be}$	$(2.3 \pm 0.1) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{85}\text{Kr}$	$(2.7 \pm 0.2) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{210}\text{Bi}$	$(2.1 \pm 0.2) \times 10^{-4}$
$pep$	$(1.0 \pm 0.2) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{210}\text{Po}$	$(3.5 \pm 0.5) \times 10^{-4}$

TABLE XIII. The fraction of Monte Carlo events reconstructed in the  ${}^7\text{Be}$ -FV and thrown away by the set of selection cuts described in Section XIII.1.

spectrum of events passing all selection cuts as described above. Table XII summarizes the fraction of events due to  $\gamma$  rays from these radioactive sources which are rejected by such selection cuts. We give the results for source positions in the center of the detector and outside the FV along the vertical axis at  $z = 3$  m and  $z = -3$  m. In this test we excluded from the selection cuts the FV cut (we tested all available source positions), coincidence cut and multiple-cluster cut due to increased source activity. The dominant rejection of events is due to the IDF muon flag.

The spectra of the neutrino-induced events and events from radioactive background sources have been simulated with the Monte Carlo following the procedure whose details will be reported in Section XVIII. The efficiency of the cuts has been evaluated for each spectral component as a fraction of events surviving the event-selection cuts from all events reconstructed in the FV. The muon cut in the Monte Carlo data only includes the IDF flag. Removal of coincident events and the abnormal delay of the cluster start time are not simulated. Table XIII reports the fraction of events with energy higher than  $N_h = 100$  removed from each spectrum. We conclude that the inefficiency of the cuts is negligible.

### XIII.3. Event-by-event based $\alpha - \beta$ cut

Figure 35 shows the distribution of the  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  parameter as a function of energy. It compares the data passing all selection cuts as described in Section XIII.1 and the Monte Carlo simulated  $pep$  neutrinos. These neutrinos were chosen instead of  ${}^7\text{Be}$  neutrinos since they span up to higher energies. The main structure is a band of  $\beta$ - and  $\gamma$ -like events with  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  typically negative, while in the energy region dominated by  ${}^{14}\text{C}$  ( $N_p$  below 100) the  $\alpha - \beta$  discrimination is not effective. In the data, there are events with positive  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  not compatible with the Monte Carlo expectation for neutrino interactions, dominated by the  $\alpha$  events of  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  at  $N_p \sim 200$ . However, events with such positive  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  are present also outside the energy range of the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  peak which can be only partially explained by real  $\alpha$ 's. Some events do not have the  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  variable compatible neither with  $\beta$  or  $\gamma$  nor with  $\alpha$  and are explained as remaining noise events. Therefore, we have applied an additional energy-dependent cut based

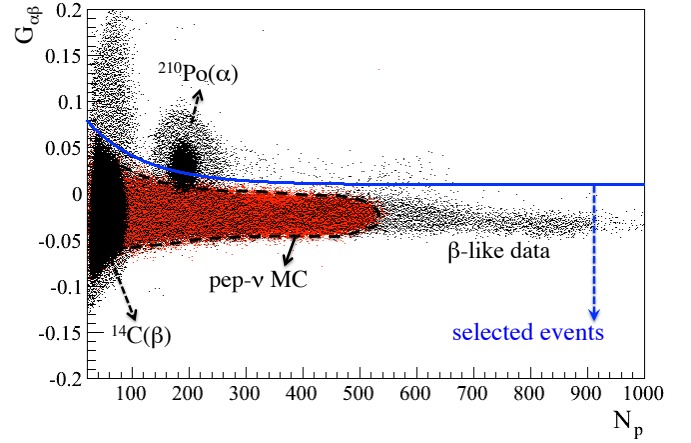


FIG. 35. The distribution of the Gatti  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  parameter as a function of energy ( $N_p$  variable). The continuous (blue) line shows the energy dependent cut; it removes all the events with  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  above the line. The (red) points enclosed within the dashed line show the  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  distribution for MC-simulated  $pep-\nu$ 's; these events are an example of true  $\beta$  events with a spectrum extending over a sufficiently large energy range. The  $\beta$  events are not affected by this cut, while, on the contrary, this cut removes a large fraction of the  $\alpha$  events, as those from the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  decay.

Isotope	$(x,y,z)$	Energy [m] [keV]	Probability (limits at 90% C.L.)
${}^{203}\text{Hg}$	(0,0,0)	279	$(1.45 \pm 0.15) \times 10^{-3}$
${}^{203}\text{Hg}$	(0,0,3)	279	$(1.06 \pm 0.75) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{203}\text{Hg}$	(0,0,-3)	279	$(4.67 \pm 1.65) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{85}\text{Sr}$	(0,0,0)	514	$(1.56 \pm 0.26) \times 10^{-3}$
${}^{85}\text{Sr}$	(0,0,3)	514	$(3.59 \pm 2.07) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{85}\text{Sr}$	(0,0,-3)	514	$(9.98 \pm 3.53) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{54}\text{Mn}$	(0,0,0)	834	$(3.00 \pm 0.54) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{54}\text{Mn}$	(0,0,3)	834	$(2.43 \pm 0.86) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{54}\text{Mn}$	(0,0,-3)	834	$(2.80 \pm 2.80) \times 10^{-5}$
${}^{65}\text{Zn}$	(0,0,0)	1115	$(3.03 \pm 1.52) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{65}\text{Zn}$	(0,0,3)	1115	$< 4.9 \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{65}\text{Zn}$	(0,0,-3)	1115	$(2.08 \pm 2.08) \times 10^{-4}$
${}^{40}\text{K}$	(0,0,0)	1460	$1.35 \pm 1.35 \times 10^{-5}$
${}^{40}\text{K}$	(0,0,3)	1460	$< 9.8 \times 10^{-5}$
${}^{40}\text{K}$	(0,0,-3)	1460	$< 8.9 \times 10^{-5}$

TABLE XIV. The fraction of  $\gamma$ -source events passing the selection cuts described in Section XIII.1 which are then thrown away by the energy dependent  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  cut.

on the  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  variable (see the solid blue curve in Figure 35) which was tuned both on the Monte Carlo and on the radioactive source calibration data in order to minimize the fraction of  $\beta$  events thrown away (see Table XIV). The spectra obtained in this way are then fit as described below.



#### XIV. $\alpha - \beta$ STATISTICAL SUBTRACTION

After the application of the cuts described in Subsection XIII.1, the  $^{210}\text{Po}$   $\alpha$  peak, which falls entirely within the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  energy window, remains two to three orders of magnitude above the rest of the spectrum at these energies, as Fig. 33 shows. The peak tails, if not correctly modeled in the fit procedure, might influence the results about the  $^7\text{Be}$  neutrino interaction rate.

As it can be seen in Fig. 35 and Fig. 28, the  $G_\alpha$  variable of  $^{210}\text{Po}$   $\alpha$ 's extends to negative values and is not fully separated from the  $G_\beta$  variable of  $\beta$ -like events. Therefore, an event-by-event cut based on the  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  value throwing away  $\alpha$ 's with high efficiency while keeping all of the  $\beta$ 's is not possible, in particular when the number of  $\alpha$  events largely exceeds that of the  $\beta$ . We have then implemented a statistical separation of the  $\alpha$ - and  $\beta$ -induced signals. For each bin in the energy spectrum, the  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  distribution of the data is fitted to two curves which represent the distribution of the  $G_\alpha$  and  $G_\beta$  variables. The fit amplitudes are then the relative population of each species in the energy bin. This procedure has been included in both the analytical and Monte Carlo fit methods.

In the analytical method the  $G_\alpha$  and  $G_\beta$  distributions are assumed to be Gaussian, the fit is done iteratively and the population estimates is continuously refined. In bins where one species greatly outnumbers the other, for example in the energy region of the  $^{210}\text{Po}$  peak, the means of the Gaussians are fixed to their predicted values. Figure 36 shows an example of the  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  parameter of the data in the energy range  $200 < N_{pe}^d < 205$  and its fit with the analytical method. In order to estimate possible bias in the fit results, we simulated and fitted events with known  $G_\alpha$  and  $G_\beta$  parameter in relative proportions as in the data. The fit results are then compared to the true  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  proportions used in the simulation.

In the Monte Carlo method the  $G_\alpha$  and  $G_\beta$  functions are obtained simulating a large number of  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  events with the energy of interest, uniformly distributed in the IV and then reconstructed within the FV. These curves are used as fit functions and the free fit parameters are their amplitudes (that is the number of  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  events in the energy bin under examination) and the shift resulting from the discussion in Section XVIII. Figure 37 shows an example of the  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  parameter for the data with  $N_h$  from 168 to 170 and the fit with the Monte Carlo procedure. A shift is observed in the MC distribution, which is very small: its value is 0.002 at maximum (corresponding to two bins). The red and blue lines in Fig. 37 are the Monte Carlo  $G_\alpha$  and  $G_\beta$  functions without the shift, while the best fit (green curve) takes the small shift into account. The shapes of the  $G_\alpha$  and  $G_\beta$  curves obtained with the Monte Carlo show some tails that slightly deviate from a Gaussian curve. The effect is small and in fact the results about the statistical subtraction obtained with the analytical and Monte Carlo method are in a good agreement.

The statistical subtraction can be carried out over the

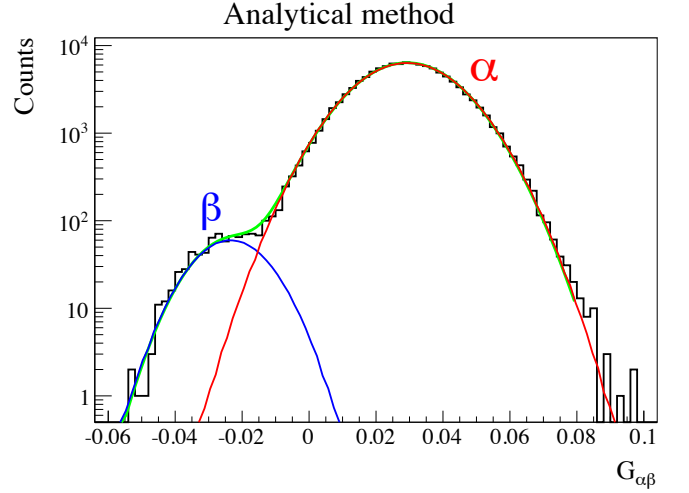


FIG. 36. Example of  $\alpha - \beta$  statistical subtraction with the analytical method for events in the energy range  $200 < N_{pe}^d < 205$ . The blue and red lines show the individual Gaussian fits to the Gatti parameter distributions for the  $\beta$  and  $\alpha$  components, respectively, while the green line is the total fit.

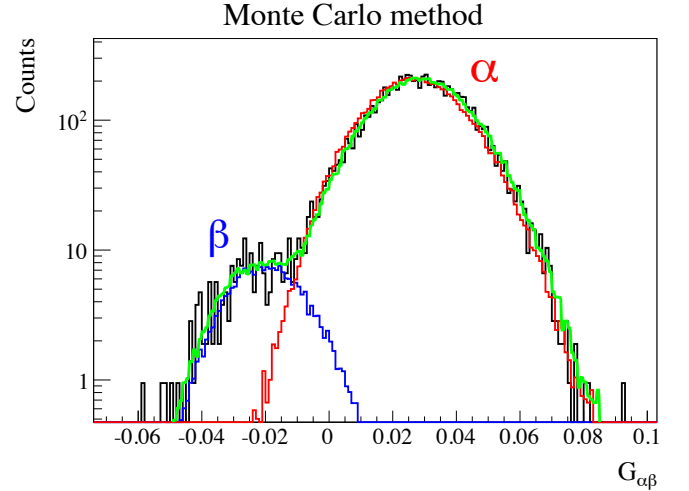


FIG. 37. Example of  $\alpha - \beta$  statistical subtraction with the Monte Carlo method for events in the energy range  $168 < N_h < 170$ . The plot shows the Gatti parameter of the data (black) and the fit (green) aiming to separate the  $\alpha$  (red) and  $\beta$  (blue) contributions. In comparison to analytical method demonstrated in Fig. 36, the blue  $\beta$  and  $\alpha$  shapes are Monte Carlo shapes which are not Gaussian. Details in text.

entire energy spectrum removing  $\alpha$  decays of isotopes such as  $^{210}\text{Po}$ ,  $^{222}\text{Rn}$ , and  $^{218}\text{Po}$  or it can be applied in a restricted energy region. The effect of the choice of the energy region where the statistical  $\alpha - \beta$  subtraction is applied on the resulting  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate is accounted in the systematic uncertainty as discussed in Section XXII.

## XV. $^{11}\text{C}$ SUPPRESSION

The  $^{11}\text{C}$  interaction rate in Borexino is determined via a fit of the energy spectrum (see Section XXII) and is measured as  $(28.5 \pm 0.2(\text{stat}) \pm 0.7(\text{sys}))$  cpd/100 ton [7]. While  $^{11}\text{C}$  is not problematic for the determination of the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate, it is a relevant source of background for the measurement of the interaction rate of *pep* and CNO neutrinos; in fact, its rate is about ten times greater than the one from *pep* neutrinos and the higher energy portion of the signals induced by *pep* and CNO neutrinos largely superimposes with its spectrum. Only the development of robust procedures able to subtract its contribution has allowed the *pep* and CNO studies. Most of the events due to  $^{11}\text{C}$  decays has been rejected via a threefold coincidence (TFC) between the  $^{11}\text{C}$  positron decay, the parent muon, and the signal from capture of the free neutron (described in Subsection XV.1) as implemented in [60]. The residual amount of  $^{11}\text{C}$  is determined using a novel pulse-shape discrimination technique (described in Subsections XV.2) applied in a Boosted Decision Tree (BDT) approach discussed in Subsection XV.3.

### XV.1. Three-fold coincidence veto

As described in Section XI.4,  $^{11}\text{C}$  is mostly originated by the interaction of muons in the scintillator and its production is accompanied by prompt neutrons and by the delayed 2230 keV  $\gamma$  ray resulting from the subsequent neutron capture in hydrogen. Neutron capture by  $^{12}\text{C}$  produces a  $\gamma$  of higher energy (4950 keV) but the probability is small compared to the hydrogen capture. The reconstruction of the interaction positions of these  $\gamma$  rays and of the tracks of parent muons are crucial for the success of the TFC technique. Muon tracking algorithms have been developed and are described in detail in [25].

The TFC algorithm vetoes space-time regions of the detector after muon plus neutron coincidences in order to exclude the subsequent  $^{11}\text{C}(\beta^+)$  decays. The guiding principle for the determination of the most appropriate parameters is the search for the optimal compromise between  $^{11}\text{C}$  rejection and preservation of the residual exposure after the veto cuts. Figure 38 shows the Monte Carlo predictions on the sensitivity for the *pep*- $\nu$  interaction rate measurement as a function of the residual  $^{11}\text{C}$  rate and the effective residual exposure. This study shows that no significant bias in the fitted *pep*- $\nu$  interaction rate is expected from the loss of exposure.

The evaluation of the effective exposure after all veto cuts, many of which overlap in time and space, has been performed through the so-called counting method; firstly, through a simulation feeding uniformly distributed events to the veto cuts and by computing the fraction of the simulated events that survive these vetoes. The result has been compared with that obtained counting the number of  $^{210}\text{Po}$  events before and after the application of the TFC algorithm. The two methods agree to much better than 1%.

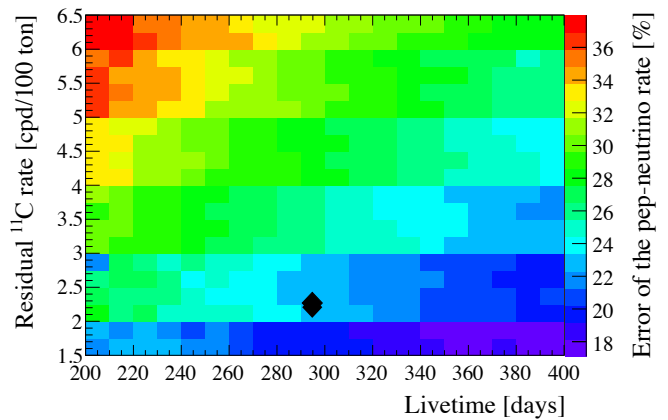


FIG. 38. Prediction of the sensitivity to the *pep*- $\nu$  interaction rate measurement ( $z$ -axis) as a function of the residual  $^{11}\text{C}$  rate ( $y$ -axis) and the effective live-time ( $x$ -axis) obtained by fitting the MC-simulated data. The color  $z$ -axis is expressed as the uncertainty (%) on the *pep*- $\nu$  interaction rate returned by the fit. We recall that the  $^{11}\text{C}$  rate measured without applying the TFC subtraction is  $(28.5 \pm 0.2(\text{stat}) \pm 0.7(\text{sys}))$  cpd/100 ton. The black diamond corresponds to the TFC-subtracted spectrum used in the analysis (see Fig. 40).

The TFC procedure can be summarized as follows:

- A suitable time veto has been applied at the beginning of each run, since muon plus neutron coincidences can be lost in the interval between runs. The veto time, in minutes, is obtained by  $10 + 60 (1 - \exp(-3\Delta t/\tau))$ , where  $\Delta t$  is the dead-time interval between subsequent runs (in minutes) and  $\tau$  is the neutron-capture time.  $\Delta t$  is typically of the order of a minute but sometimes can reach a significant fraction of an hour.
- A veto of 2 hours is applied after muons with high neutron multiplicity.
- When the reconstructed neutron position is not reliable, due to the electronics saturation effects and/or due to a large fraction of noise hits, a cylindrical veto along the parent muon track with a radius of 80 cm for a time span of 2 hours is applied.
- If neutron clusters are found in a muon gate but more than  $2\mu\text{s}$  after the muon, then the cylindrical veto along the muon track described above is applied.
- A cylindrical veto is also applied around those OD- $\mu$ 's (see Section XIII.1) tracks after which the Analogue Sum DAQ (Section VI) finds at least one neutron.
- If a neutron is found and its position is considered reliable, we veto a sphere of 1 m radius centered in this reconstructed position for 2 hours. Moreover, another 1 m spherical veto is applied around the point on the muon track that is closest from the neutron capture position.

Figure 39 schematically shows the vetoed regions. The application of this TFC algorithm results in  $>89.4\%$   $^{11}\text{C}$  rejection with a residual exposure of 48.5%. Figure 40 shows the effect of the TFC veto and compares the spectra before and after its application: the  $^{11}\text{C}$  rate decreases from  $\sim 28$  cpd/100 ton to  $\sim 2.5$  cpd/100 ton with a 51.5% loss of exposure. Only events passing the selection criteria described in Subsection XIII.1 and the *pep*-FV cut described in Section XI contribute in these spectra. The resulting exposure of the TFC-subtracted spectrum is 20409 days  $\times$  ton, while for the spectrum of the TFC-tagged events it is 23522 days  $\times$  ton.

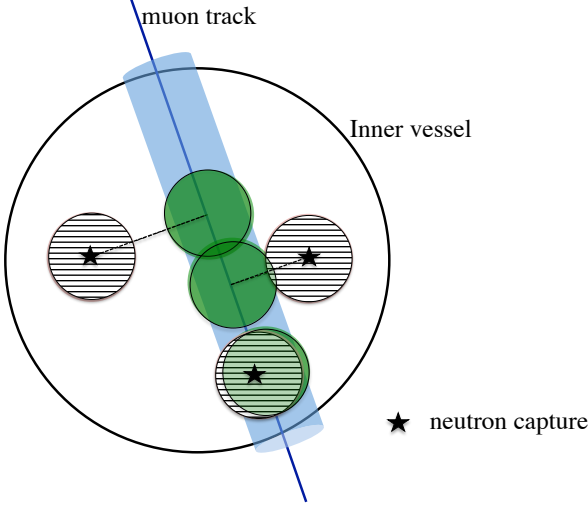


FIG. 39. The spatial regions vetoed in the TFC method: a cylinder around the muon track (blue) and some examples of spheres centered around the point where the  $\gamma$  following the neutron capture is reconstructed (areas with horizontal lines around the stars) and their projections along the muon track (green areas).

## XV.2. $\beta^+/\beta^-$ pulse-shape discrimination

We have observed that the profile of the reconstructed emission times for scintillation photons produced by positron is different than those from electrons. Prior to annihilation in two back-to-back  $\gamma$  rays, the positron emitted in  $^{11}\text{C}$  decays may form a bound state with an electron in the scintillator, the positronium. The ground state of positronium has two possible configurations depending on the relative orientation of the spins of the electron and the positron: the spin singlet state (para-positronium), with a very short mean life-time of 125 ps in vacuum, and the spin triplet state, called ortho-positronium, with a mean life-time in vacuum equal to 140 ns. In liquid scintillator, however, the life-time of ortho-positronium is reduced because of interactions with the surrounding medium: processes like spin-flip, or pick-off annihilation on collision with an anti-parallel spin bulk electron, lead to the two-body decay within few

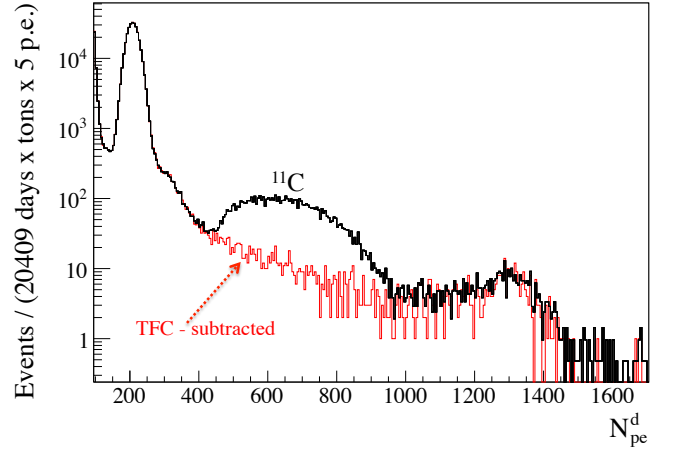


FIG. 40. Energy spectra ( $N_{pe}^d$  energy estimator) before (black) and after (red) the application of the TFC technique for  $^{11}\text{C}$  removal. Both spectra are normalized to the same exposure.

ns. Laboratory measurements lead to  $\sim 3$  ns mean-life and  $\sim 50\%$  ortho-positronium formation probability [61] in scintillators. This delay of the annihilation introduced by the ortho-positronium formation is comparable in size to the fast scintillation time constant  $\tau_1$  (see Table III), and therefore is expected to introduce a measurable distortion in the time distribution of hit PMTs with respect to a pure  $\beta^-$  event of the same reconstructed energy. Additional distortions are expected from the diffuse geometry of events resulting from the positronium decay, due to the non-null mean free path of the ensuing  $\gamma$  rays. The direct annihilation of the positron in flight is expected to occur  $<5\%$  of the time following  $^{11}\text{C}$  decay [62]. Considering the time-resolution of the scintillator, this process is indistinguishable from annihilation following para-positronium formation, and only contributes to a small fraction of the events assigned to that population.

Figure 41 shows an event where there is a clear time-separation between the energy deposit by the positron and the sub-sequent energy deposition from the annihilation  $\gamma$ -rays, after the formation of ortho-positronium. Given its half-life, only  $\sim 1\%$  of events that form ortho-positronium have a time separation that is at least this long. Generally, the separation is small enough that the two peaks are indistinguishable and only a broadening of the time distribution is observed.

Figure 42 shows the distribution, averaged over many events, of the photon-emission times (hit times, once subtracted the time-of-flight from the reconstructed position) for  $\beta^-$  events ( $^{214}\text{Bi}$  from the  $^{214}\text{Bi} - ^{214}\text{Po}$  coincidence tag) and for  $^{11}\text{C}$  ( $\beta^+$ ) TFC tagged events. The delay and broadening of the peak in the average time distribution due to ortho-positronium formation is evident.

The relative weight of the delayed annihilation energy  $2m_e c^2$  ( $m_e c^2$  is the electron plus positron rest energy) with respect to the total energy deposited by the  $\beta^+$  (that

is  $2m_e c^2$  plus the initial  $\beta^+$  kinetic energy  $T$ ) decreases with  $\beta^+$  energy increasing. Therefore, the difference between  $\beta^+$  and  $\beta^-$  reconstructed emission times is energy dependent and the discrimination power of any pulse-shape based method decreases as the energy of the  $\beta^+$  event increases.

In order to detect and quantify this effect, as well as to develop pulse-shape variables to discriminate  $\beta^+$  and  $\beta^-$  events, we have developed a special Monte Carlo event generator to simulate ortho-positronium formation and yield the corrected pulse shape. According to the input formation probability and life-time, the code generates positronium decays and positron annihilations. This process is simulated as a three-body vertex, composed by an electron, and two delayed annihilation gammas. The use of electrons instead of positrons is an approximation aimed to simplify the simulation, and motivated by the almost identical energy losses, with the exception of the annihilation process. The delay of the 511 keV  $\gamma$  rays follows an exponential law with  $\tau$  set to that of the ortho-positronium mean-life. The comparison between the reconstructed emission times for simulated and measured  $^{11}\text{C}$  is shown in Fig. 43. The fitted ortho-positronium formation probability of 53% is compatible with other laboratory measurements [61].

### XV.3. Boosted Decision Tree

Several variables having some discrimination power between  $\beta^-$  and  $\beta^+$  have been used in a boosted-decision-tree algorithm (BDT). This procedure is a powerful method to classify events and, after its training with a sample of  $\beta^-$  and with another sample of  $\beta^+$  events, it allows to assign a parameter PS-BDT to each event. The train samples are used to define the probability distribution function of this parameter. We selected as  $\beta^-$  sample the low-energy  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  events ( $450 < N_{pe}^d < 900$ ) tagged

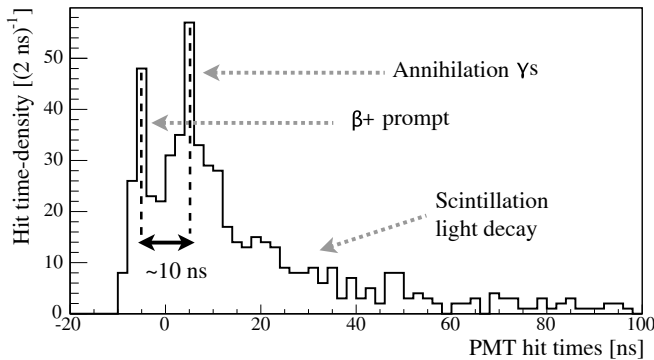


FIG. 41. Hit-emission time profile of a single event due to  $\beta^+$  decay, where the positron deposits its kinetic energy (first peak) and then forms ortho-positronium. The ortho-positronium exists for  $\sim 10$  ns before the positron annihilates with a bulk electron to produce  $\gamma$ -rays (second peak). The PS-BDT value (Fig 45) of this cluster is -0.44.

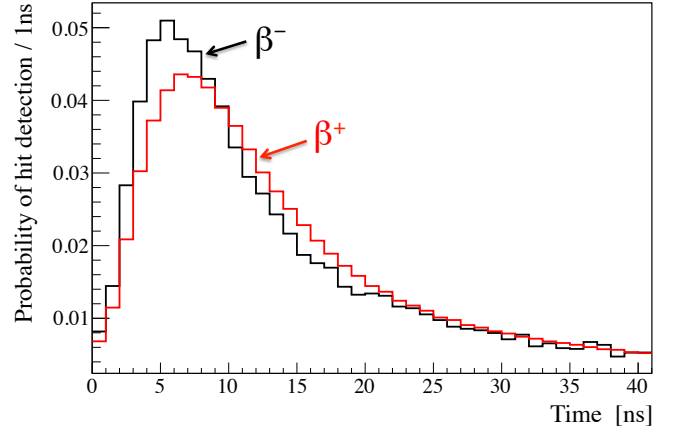


FIG. 42. Reconstructed photon emission times relative to the start time of the cluster:  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  ( $\beta^-$ ) events with  $425 < N_h < 475$  identified by a  $^{214}\text{Bi} - ^{214}\text{Po}$  fast coincidence tag (black) and  $^{11}\text{C}$  ( $\beta^+$ ) events tagged by the TFC (red).

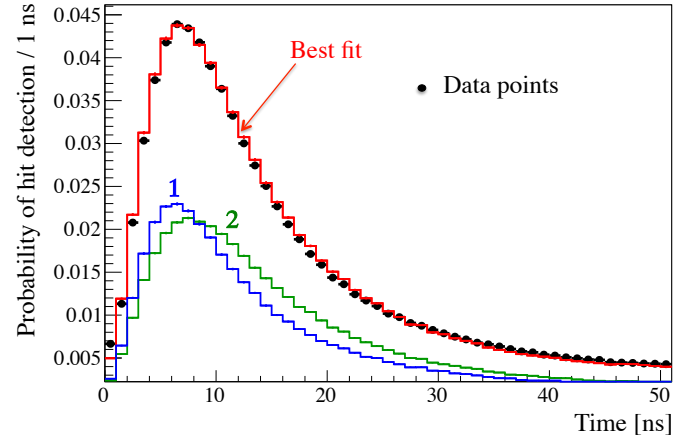


FIG. 43. Reconstructed photon emission times for  $^{11}\text{C}$  events. The data (black points) has been fitted to the  $^{11}\text{C}$  Monte Carlo shapes without (1-blue) and with (2-green) ortho-positronium formation (mean-life of 3.1 ns); the relative weights of these two shapes were left free in the fit. The best fit, the sum of the two MC-shapes, is shown red.

by the  $^{214}\text{Bi} - ^{214}\text{Po}$  coincidence tag, where the fraction of the energy deposited by gamma rays is only  $\sim 5\%$  as Fig. 44 shows. The  $\beta^+$  sample are events tagged with the TFC and with  $450 < N_{pe}^d < 900$  and it is an almost pure ( $> 98\%$ )  $^{11}\text{C}$  sample. Only events reconstructed within the FV used in the *pep* analysis have been considered. The variables used in the BDT algorithm are:

- The Gatti parameter (Section XII) computed using as reference the  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  and  $^{11}\text{C}$  time profiles from real data, with reconstructed emission times relative to the peak.
- The Gatti parameter computed using as reference the  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  and  $^{11}\text{C}$  time profiles from real data, with reconstructed emission time relative to the cluster start

time.

- The Gatti parameter computed using as reference the  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  data and ortho-positronium (Monte Carlo generated) time profiles, with reconstructed emission time relative to the cluster start time.
- The Gatti parameter computed using as reference the Monte Carlo generated  $^{11}\text{C}$  time profiles with and without ortho-positronium formation, with reconstructed emission time relative to the cluster start time.
- The Gatti parameter  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  computed using as reference the  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  and  $^{214}\text{Po}$  time profiles from data.
- The Kolmogorov – Smirnov probabilities between the light-emission-time distribution of the event and the  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  and  $^{214}\text{Po}$  reference time profiles.
- The reconstructed emission time, relative to the peak of the time distribution, of the earliest hit in the cluster.
- The peak of the emission-time distribution relative to the reconstructed time of the event.
- The first four moments of the emission-time distribution (i.e. mean, *rms*, skewness, and kurtosis) for hits up to  $1.1\ \mu\text{s}$  after the cluster start.
- Ten variables that are the fraction of the hits in the cluster after particular times (35, 70, 105, 140, 175, 210, 245, 280, 315, and 350 ns) relative to the peak of the distribution.
- The first four Legendre polynomials, averaged over all combinations, of the angle between any two hit PMTs relative to the reconstructed position of the event.
- The uncertainties in the reconstructed position along an axis ( $x$ ,  $y$ , and  $z$ , as returned by the fitter) divided by the mean of the other two uncertainties.
- The ratio (for all axes) of the reconstructed position of the event obtained from the time-of-flight subtraction algorithm to the charge-weighted average of the hit PMT positions in the event.

The final output variable of the BDT algorithm, the PS-BDT parameter and the corresponding distributions for the test samples are shown in Fig. 45.

## XVI. THE ENERGY RESPONSE FUNCTION

The energy response function  $P_{N_p}$  ( $P_{N_h}$ ,  $P_{N_{pe}}$ ,  $P_{N_{pe}^d}$ ) is the probability distribution function for the measured energy estimator of an event when the energy  $E$  is released in a given position inside the detector. Each energy estimator defined in Section IX has its response function. Besides the energy  $E$  this function depends in principle on many other quantities:

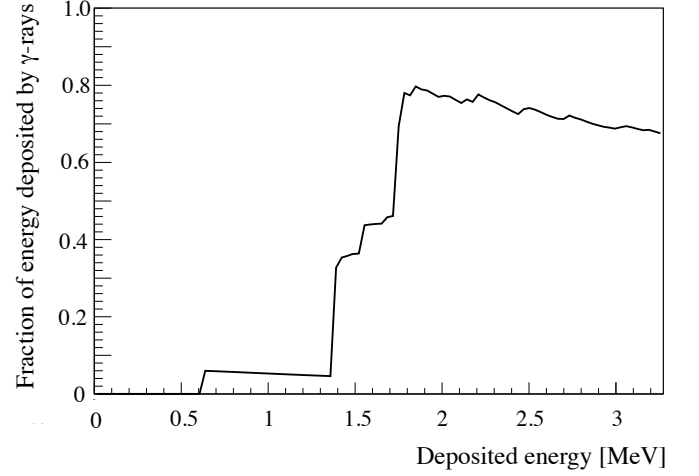


FIG. 44. Average fraction of the energy deposited by  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  decays in the form of  $\gamma$ -rays. For deposited energy below 1400 keV, only less than 5% of the energy is due to  $\gamma$ -rays. Therefore, low-energy  $^{214}\text{Bi}$  decays are a sample of mostly pure  $\beta^-$  decays.

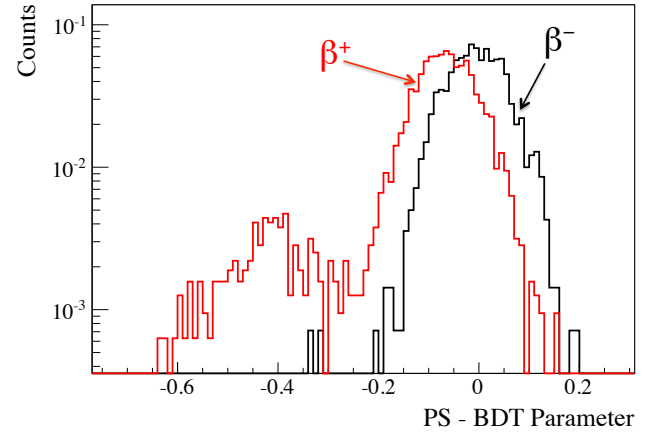


FIG. 45. Distributions of the PS-BDT parameter for the test samples of  $\beta^-$  (black) and  $\beta^+$  (red) events as described in the text.

- the position  $\vec{r}$  inside the IV where the interaction generating the energy deposit takes place. Light absorption, optical effects related to the light concentrators mounted around the PMTs and the inhomogeneous distribution of dead PMTs make the number of detected photoelectrons position-dependent;
- the particle type  $p$  where  $p = \alpha, \beta, \gamma$ . The scintillation mechanism is such that  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma$  particles depositing the same energy in the scintillator produce a different amount of light and thus of hit PMTs and photoelectrons, as discussed in Section VII;
- parameters related to the scintillator: examples are the light yield, the emission spectrum, the absorption and scattering length as a function of the wavelength, the



re-emission probability and so on. We indicate the list of these parameters with the vector  $\vec{s}$ ;

- parameters describing the detector geometry and the properties of the materials relevant for the light propagation. We generically indicate the list of these parameters with the vector  $\vec{d}$ ;
- parameters (here indicated with  $\vec{e}$ ) describing the electronics response (dead time, gate length, multiple-hits handling), the number and the characteristics of the active PMTs (thresholds, gain, single-photon peak position and *rms*, dark noise, after-pulse probability)
- the absolute time  $t$  as the properties of the detector may change in time.

Thus, in general we have  $P_{N_p}(E, \vec{r}, p, \vec{s}, \vec{d}, \vec{e}, t)$  (and similarly for  $P_{N_h}$ ,  $P_{N_{phe}}$ ,  $P_{N_{phe}}^d$ ). We will often write  $P_x(E, \vec{l})$  where  $x$  is one of the energy estimators and  $\vec{l}$  stands for list of all other variables  $(\vec{r}, p, \vec{s}, \vec{d}, \vec{e}, t)$ . Note that the explicit analytical dependence on all these parameters may be in general impossible to obtain and the models that we are going to discuss often make use of a response function integrated over several of the listed parameters.

We are adopting two complementary approaches to determine  $P_x(E, \vec{l})$ : the first is based on the use of analytical models and is described in the Section XVII while the second uses a Monte Carlo method and is described in Section XVIII. Both methods are validated using the radioactive-source calibration data.

## XVII. THE ANALYTICAL PROCEDURE

A response function has to perform the transformation of the spectra from the original energy scale to the scale of the desired estimator, including the appropriate resolution effects. This transformation is quantitatively defined by the  $P_x(E; \vec{l})$  relation introduced above.

The shape of the response function is generally characterized by its central moments: the mean, variance, and, in some cases, the skewness; mathematically it is modeled by an analytical function, whose central moments are chosen to match those of the corresponding energy estimator. For signal and background spectra that are not mono-energetic, the transformation can be easily generalized to obtain the final spectrum in the domain of the energy estimator.

This procedure has been fully developed for the three energy estimators  $N_{pe}$ ,  $N_p$ , and  $N_{pe}^d$ , but not for  $N_h$ , since in this case the effect of multiple hits on a single PMT is analytically intractable. Among the others, the two  $\beta^+$  decaying species  $^{10}\text{C}$  and  $^{11}\text{C}$ , cosmogenically produced in the scintillator, require special treatment of the two associated 511 keV annihilation gammas, especially for what concern their effective quenching. Without entering into too many details, we can say that the  $\gamma$ -quenching in

this occurrence is either pre-determined through a simplified ad-hoc Monte Carlo, or added as free parameter in the overall final fit procedure.

Needless to say, in the analytical approach several model simplifications are necessary and the dependence upon the whole list  $\vec{l}$  of parameters cannot be explicitly resolved. However, the analytical procedure allows the values of some of the input parameters to be directly optimized during the fit to the data and to provide clear-relations linking the energy to the measured quantities.

### XVII.1. The quenching factor and $kB$

Pre-requisite for any analytical modeling is the adoption of a practical expression for the quenching factor  $Q_p(kB; E)$  defined in Eq. 7, as well as the determination of the proper value of the  $kB$  parameter characterizing our scintillator, since the intrinsic link between the initial energy deposit and the mean amount of produced photoelectrons is a key ingredient in any analytical approach.

Specifically, the determination of  $kB$  is performed through the exploitation of the calibration data obtained with the  $\gamma$  sources deployed at the center of the detector with energy ranging from 250 keV to 2230 keV. The number of photons  $N_{ph}$  emitted in each event of energy  $E$  can be expressed as:

$$N_{ph}(E) = Y_0^{ph} \cdot Q_p(kB; E) \cdot E + N_{Ch}^{ph}, \quad (40)$$

in which the first term describes the contribution from the scintillation light and has the form of Eq. 6 (and in the particular case of  $\gamma$ -calibration sources can be replaced by the Eq. 8), while the second term  $N_{Ch}^{ph}$  describes the Cherenkov light contribution which, in principle, can be obtained by the integration of Eq. 9.

The number of ideally measured photoelectrons  $N_{pe}^{ideal}$  can be similarly expressed as:

$$N_{pe}^{ideal} = Y_0^{pe} \cdot Q_p(kB; E) \cdot E + N_{Ch}^{pe}, \quad (41)$$

in which  $Y_0^{pe}$  is the scintillation photoelectron yield expressed in p.e./MeV. Again, in the specific case of the  $\gamma$  rays, this relation becomes:

$$N_{pe, \gamma}^{ideal} = Y_0^{pe} \sum_i Q_\beta(kB; E_i) \cdot E_i + \sum_i N_{Ch, i}^{pe}, \quad (42)$$

in which the sum  $i$  goes over all electrons and positrons produced in the  $\gamma$ -ray interactions.

The value of  $kB$  can be obtained from the  $\gamma$ -source calibration data using the Eq 42. In order to find the best approximation of the  $N_{pe}^{ideal}$ , we express it as follows:

$$N_{pe}^{ideal} = \langle \mu \rangle N_{tot}, \quad (43)$$

where  $\langle \mu \rangle$  is the average number of photoelectrons measured by a single channel and  $N_{tot} = 2000$  is the number of channels to which we normalize our energy estimators as was shown in Section IX.

Assuming a Poisson distribution of photoelectrons on each PMT, the average number of photoelectrons  $\mu_i$  measured by a single channel  $i$  can be expressed through a measurable probability  $h_i$  that the channel  $i$  detects at least 1 hit:

$$h_i = 1 - \exp(-\mu_i), \quad (44)$$

in which  $h_i$  can be estimated by computing in what fraction of the clusters the channel  $i$  registers at least one hit. Then, for a single channel  $i$  we obtain the value of  $\mu_i$ :

$$\mu_i = -\ln[1 - h_i] \quad (45)$$

and by averaging over all channels we obtain  $\langle\mu\rangle$ , and thus through Eq. 43 also  $N_{pe}^{\text{ideal}}$  for each  $\gamma$ -calibration source measurement.

Fig. 46 shows the data points of  $N_{pe}^{\text{ideal}}$  obtained as described above and shown as the function of energy of the  $\gamma$  source  $E_\gamma$ . The fit function corresponds to Eq. 42 and was obtained by a dedicated MC in the following way: for each of the  $\gamma$ -ray source energies, an event was simulated and the energy of each of the electron recoils was stored. At this stage, the quenching to each energy deposit was applied “ad hoc” using the Birk’s quenching formula of Eq. 5, rather than simulating fully the physical process as done in the context of the Monte Carlo evaluation described in the next Section XVIII. This MC was then done for thousands of  $\gamma$  rays and for a wide range of  $kB$  values. The Cherenkov contribution of Eq. 42 was fixed according to the full GEANT4 simulation described in the next Section XVIII. Finally,  $kB$  and  $Y_0^{pe}$  were left as free fit parameters and the best-fit values are  $kB = 0.00115 \pm 0.0007$  and  $Y_0^{pe} = 489 \pm 2$  p.e./MeV.

In order to compute the quenching factor  $Q_\beta$  for all energies of interest and for a known  $kB$  value, it is practical to use the explicit functional form taken from [63]:

$$Q_\beta(kB; E) \equiv \left( \frac{A_1 + A_2 \ln(E) + A_3 \ln^2(E)}{1 + A_4 \ln(E) + A_5 \ln^2(E)} \right), \quad (46)$$

which has the advantage of being easy to implement in the general fitting procedure. As explained in [63], there is a specific correspondence between the values of the  $A_i$  parameters and the  $kB$  value: in our case  $kB = 0.0115$  corresponds to the set of values  $A_i = (1.019, 0.127, 6.067 \times 10^{-5}, 0.117, 0.007)$  with  $i$  ranging from 1 to 5.

### XVII.2. $N_{pe}$ and $N_{pe}^d$ estimators

Because of their similarity, we treat the two  $N_{pe}$  and  $N_{pe}^d$  estimators together. The relation between the mean number of photoelectrons  $N_{pe}$  and the energy  $E$ , is given by a generalization of the quenching relation discussed in Section VII:

$$N_{pe} = N_{pe}^0 + Y_0^{pe} \cdot f_R(\vec{r}) \cdot E \cdot Q_p(E, kB), \quad (47)$$

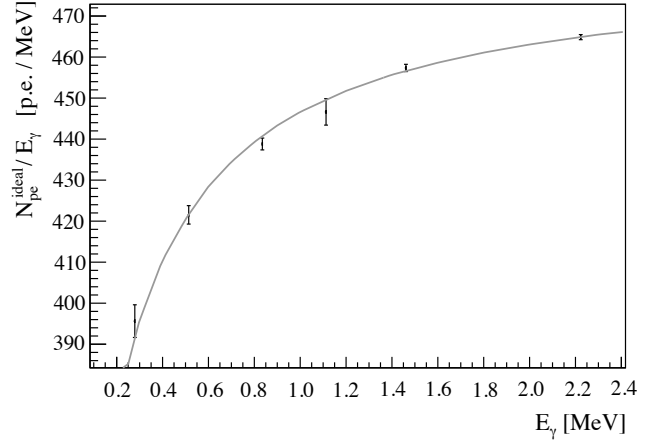


FIG. 46. Data points for six different  $\gamma$ -ray lines:  $^{203}\text{Hg}$ ,  $^{85}\text{Sr}$ ,  $^{54}\text{Mn}$ ,  $^{65}\text{Zn}$ ,  $^{40}\text{K}$ , and the 2230 keV  $\gamma$  from the neutron capture:  $N_{pe}^{\text{ideal}}/\text{MeV}$  expressed as a function of  $E_\gamma$ . The data is fit with the function corresponding to Eq. 42 which is obtained by a dedicated “ad hoc” Monte Carlo using the Birk’s quenching model (details in text). The best fit values are  $kB = 0.00115 \pm 0.0007$  and  $Y_0^{pe} = 489 \pm 2$  p.e./MeV.

where the quenching factor  $Q_p(E, kB)$  is that of Eq. 46 in case of  $\beta$  particles (the effective quenching  $Q_\gamma$  defined in Eq. 8 is used for  $\gamma$ s),  $Y_0^{pe}$  is the scintillation photoelectron yield expressed in units of p.e./MeV, and  $f_R(\vec{r})$  is a function describing the dependence of the observed signal on the event position  $\vec{r}$  (it is convenient to set  $f_R(0) = 1$  in the detector center);  $N_{pe}^0$  is a pedestal due to any kind of random noise during the duration of the cluster, mainly dark noise of PMTs. We recall the  $N_{pe}^d$  estimator is obtained from the  $N_{pe}$  variable through a background subtraction, thus for the  $N_{pe}^d$  estimator  $N_{pe}^0 = 0$ .

For data analysis purposes, we model the number of photoelectrons averaged over the FV. This is obtained starting from Eq. 47 and, in the case of uniformly distributed events, is given by:

$$N_{pe} = N_{pe}^0 + Y_0^{pe} \cdot E \cdot Q_p \cdot \overline{f_R(\vec{r})}. \quad (48)$$

Since  $f_R(\vec{r})$  is not expected to depend on energy, the scintillator photoelectron yield and the geometrical factor can be combined into a single parameter referred to as the FV-averaged detector scintillator photoelectron yield  $Y_{det}^{pe}$ , expressed in units of p.e./MeV. We then obtain the final formula for  $N_{pe}$ :

$$N_{pe} = N_{pe}^0 + Y_{det}^{pe} \cdot E \cdot Q_p, \quad (49)$$

where  $Y_{det}^{pe} = Y_0^{pe} \cdot \overline{f_R(\vec{r})}$ .

The second ingredient of the model deals with the variance  $\sigma_{N_{pe}}^2$  and the third central moment  $\kappa_{N_{pe}}$ . They can be computed from the various distributions associated with the scintillation process, non-uniform light collection within the detector and the multiplication process in the PMTs, considering also the effect of unavoidable dis-uniformities throughout the fiducial volume:

$$\sigma_{N_{pe}}^2 = (1 + \nu_1) c_{eq} N_{pe} + \nu_T N_{pe}^2 \quad (50)$$

$$\kappa_{N_{pe}} = (1 + 3\nu_1 + \kappa_1)c_{eq}^2 \cdot N_{pe} + 3(1 + \nu_1)\nu_T c_{eq} N_{pe}^2 + \kappa_T N_{pe}^3, \quad (51)$$

where  $\nu_1$  and  $\kappa_1$  are the relative variance and the third central moment of the PMT single photoelectron response, respectively, and  $\nu_T$  and  $\kappa_T$  are the relative variance and the third central moment accounting for the detector non-uniformities.  $c_{eq}(t)$  is the equalization factor introduced in Section IX, compensating for the variable number of working channels throughout the data taking period. For a complete determination, thus, Eq. 50 and Eq. 51 must be averaged over the whole data taking interval.

Furthermore, we have to consider that the variance of the “zero”-line of the ADC (pedestal) leads to a non-negligible contribution to the global variance: it includes digitizing error appearing during the analog-to-digital conversion and in general any noise in the charge measurement, that can be defined as the spread of the signal at the output of ADC with zero input signal. If  $N_p$  is the number of triggered PMTs then the additional contribution to the variance is  $N_p \sigma_{ped}^2$  where  $\sigma_{ped}$  is variance of zero line for a single PMT; at low energies  $N_p \simeq N_{pe}$ . Since pedestal noise is usually symmetric, its contribution to the third central moment should be negligible.

Another contribution to the measured charge is due to the pick-up of random noise (mainly from the dark rate of the PMTs). Using the data acquired during a special random trigger, we estimated  $N_{pe}^0 \simeq 1$  p.e. for cluster lengths of  $1.5 \mu s$ . Assuming a Poisson distribution for the random noise we obtain  $\sigma_d^2 = \kappa_d = 1$ .

Summing all contributions we finally obtain

$$\sigma_{N_{pe}}^2 = \sigma_d^2 + \sigma_{ped}^2 \cdot N_p + (1 + \nu_1) \cdot c_{eq} \cdot N_{pe} + \nu_T \cdot N_{pe}^2 \quad (52)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \kappa_{N_{pe}}(t) &= \kappa_d + (1 + 3\nu_1 + \kappa_1) \cdot c_{eq}^2(t) \cdot N_{pe} \\ &+ 3 \cdot (1 + \nu_1) \cdot \nu_T \cdot c_{eq}(t) \cdot N_{pe}^2 \\ &+ \kappa_T \cdot N_{pe}^3, \end{aligned} \quad (53)$$

to be considered averaged over the whole period of the data taking, and obviously valid also for the  $N_{pe}^d$  estimator. For the two estimators under consideration we used two different analytical approximations for the response function, which are described below.

### XVII.3. $N_{pe}$ response function

For the  $N_{pe}$  estimator we adopted as approximated description of the response function the generalized gamma function proposed in [64] for an “ideal” scintillation detector. Even though Borexino is not an ideal detector, the approximation works very well for the Borexino data, e.g. the  $^{210}\text{Po}$  peak. The Monte Carlo modeling shows a very good agreement with the analytical approximation

for a wide range of energies of interest. The generalized gamma formulation is the following:

$$\Gamma(N_{pe}; \alpha, \beta) = 2\beta^\alpha \Gamma^{-1}(\alpha) q^{2\alpha-1} e^{-\beta q^2}, \quad (54)$$

with the parameters  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  providing the match of the mean value and variance of relation 54 with the corresponding values of the scintillation response. The values of the parameters  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  are defined as:

$$\alpha = \frac{\sigma_{N_{pe}}^2 + N_{pe}^2}{\sigma_{N_{pe}}^4 \left(2 + \frac{3}{N_{pe}}\right) + 4N_{pe}^2 \left(\sigma_{N_{pe}}^2 - 2\right) + 2N_{pe} \left(6\sigma_{N_{pe}}^2 - 1\right)} \quad (55)$$

and

$$\beta = \frac{\alpha}{N_{pe}^2}. \quad (56)$$

### XVII.4. $N_{pe}^d$ response function

The analytical approximation of the response function employed for the  $N_{pe}^d$  estimator is modeled by a modified Gaussian:

$$P(N_{pe}^d) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi} \sqrt{a + b \cdot N_{pe}^d}} \exp^{-\frac{(N_{pe}^d - \lambda)^2}{2(a + b \cdot N_{pe}^d)}}, \quad (57)$$

whose parameters  $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $\lambda$ , are defined to match the first three central moments of the response function (see Section XVII.3). Grouping the terms contributing to the variance and the third central moment by their dependence on the number of detected photoelectrons, we can rewrite equations Eq. 52 and Eq. 53 as:

$$\sigma_{N_{pe}^d}^2 = g_1 \cdot N_{pe}^d + g_2 \cdot (N_{pe}^d)^2 \quad (58)$$

$$\kappa_{N_{pe}^d} = g_3 \cdot N_{pe}^d + 3g_1 \cdot g_2 \cdot (N_{pe}^d)^2 + g_4 \cdot (N_{pe}^d)^3, \quad (59)$$

where  $g_i$  are energy-independent constants that are left free in the fit. We note that we have ignored the small contribution of the dark noise to the variance and the third central moment. The parameters  $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $\lambda$ , are then approximately related to the above energy independent constants  $g_i$  by:

$$b = \frac{g_2 + 3g_1g_3 \cdot N_{pe}^d + g_4 \cdot (N_{pe}^d)^2}{3(g_1 + g_3 \cdot N_{pe}^d)} \quad (60)$$

$$\lambda = N_{pe}^d - b \quad (61)$$

$$a = -b^2 + (g_1 - b) \cdot N_{pe}^d + g_3 \cdot (N_{pe}^d)^2. \quad (62)$$

We note that also in this case the analytical expression matches the Monte Carlo simulation over a wide range of energies and input parameters.



### XVII.5. $N_p$ estimator

For the  $N_p$  estimator, its connection with the initial event energy  $E$  is realized through two steps: the first is the same quenching relation between energy and photoelectrons expressed by Eq. 47 (but without the volume factor, which is instead applied later, as we will see), while the second is the more complex relationship between  $N_{pe}$  and  $N_p$ .

In order to determine the latter, let us consider events with energy  $E$  at the detector's center and that all the electronics channels in the detector are equal, i.e. for the events at the detector's center every ADC connected to a PMT has the same probability to detect a photoelectron. If the mean total collected number of photoelectrons is  $N_{pe}$ , then the number of photoelectrons collected on average by one PMT is  $\mu_0 = \frac{N_{pe}}{N_{tot}}$ , where  $N_{tot}$  is the total number of channels defined in Section IX. The distribution of the detected photoelectron number at each PMT is expected to be Poissonian. In this case the probability  $p_0$  of absence of signal is:

$$p_0 = e^{-\mu_0} \quad (63)$$

and the probability  $p_1$  to detect at least one hit on a channel is:

$$p_1 = 1 - p_0 = 1 - e^{-\mu_0} \quad (64)$$

In order to define the total number of the channels hit, one can consider the number  $N_{tot}$  of independent probes using  $p_1$  defined by Eq. 64. The distribution of the number of the triggered channels  $N$  for events in the center obeys the binomial distribution:

$$P(N) = \binom{N_{tot}}{N} p_1^N (1 - p_1)^{(N_{tot}-N)} \quad (65)$$

From Eq. 64 the mean number of the PMTs detecting a non-zero signal is:

$$N_p = N_{tot} p_1 = N_{tot} (1 - e^{-\mu_0}). \quad (66)$$

Taking into account from this last relation that  $p_1 = N_p/N_{tot}$ , being equal to  $p_1$  expressed in the form of Eq. 64, and considering the definition of  $\mu_0$  given above, we get:

$$N_p = N_{tot} \left( 1 - e^{-\frac{N_{pe}}{N_{tot}}} \right), \quad (67)$$

which expresses the desired link between the measured number of hit PMTs ( $N_p$ ) and the number of photoelectrons ( $N_{pe}$ ). Such a relation, however, is strictly valid only at the center of the spherical detector and for a set of identical PMTs. In fact, for an event with coordinates  $\vec{r} = \{x, y, z\}$ , the mean number of detected photoelectrons is a function of  $\vec{r}$ , a fact that leads to a generalization of expression (67):

$$N_p = N_{tot} (1 - e^{-\frac{N_{pe}}{N_{tot}}}) \cdot \left( 1 - g_C(FV) \frac{N_{pe}}{N_{tot}} \right), \quad (68)$$

where the value of the geometric correction parameter  $g_C$  depends on the FV used. This new formula shows good agreement with Monte Carlo simulations throughout the volume. In summary, Eq. 68 and the quenching relation between energy and photoelectrons taken together, represent the first ingredient of the model for the  $N_p$  variable, i.e. the link between energy and  $N_p$  itself.

As far as the second ingredient is concerned, i.e. the  $N_p$  variance, again taking into account from Eq. 66 that  $p_1 = N_p/N_{tot}$ , and on the basis of the binomial nature of the detector response, it can be expressed for events in the center as:

$$\sigma_{N_p}^2 = N_{tot} p_1 (1 - p_1) = N_p \left( 1 - \frac{N_p}{N_{tot}} \right). \quad (69)$$

Its modification due to the volumetric effect within the FV can be empirically accounted for through an additional term quadratically dependent on  $N_p$ :

$$\sigma_{N_p}^2 = N_p \left( 1 - \frac{N_p}{N_{tot}} \right) + \nu_T(N_p) N_p^2. \quad (70)$$

As  $N_{pe}$ , also the  $N_p$  variable is defined taking into account the run-dependent number of working PMTs and we should consider this fact while modeling the resolution by including explicitly the equalization factor  $f_{eq}(t)$  (see Section IX). Therefore, the variance of the registered number of triggered PMTs in the equalized scale is:

$$\sigma_{N_p}^2 = N_p \left( 1 - \frac{N_p}{N_{tot}} \right) f_{eq}(t) + \nu_T(N_p) N_p^2 \quad (71)$$

to be properly averaged over the time of data taking.

The spatial non-uniformity for the  $N_p$  variable is sizable, and this is why the  $\nu_T$  factor is energy dependent. It was found through Monte Carlo modeling that in the energy range of interest this dependence is linear with respect to  $N_p$ , i.e.  $\nu_T(N_p) = \nu_T^0 N_p$ . By including for completeness also the effect of random noise ( $\sigma_d$  variance), the final variance expression is:

$$\sigma_{N_p}^2 = N_p \left( 1 - \frac{N_p}{N_{tot}} \right) \cdot f_{eq}(t) + \nu_T^0 \cdot N_p^3 + \sigma_d^2. \quad (72)$$

Finally, as the response function for the  $N_p$  variable, the same generalized gamma function introduced in Section XVII.3 in Eq. 54 is adopted replacing the  $N_{pe}$  variable with  $N_p$ .

## XVIII. THE MONTE CARLO PROCEDURE

This method of evaluation of the detector response function is based on a Monte Carlo that models and predicts the expected shapes of the signal and background. The Borexino Monte Carlo code is an ab-initio simulation of all the processes influencing the energy deposit of each type of particle in the scintillator and in the materials building the detector. It is important to model the

scintillation and Cherenkov light emission, light propagation processes including the scattering, absorption–reemission and reflection, light detection, and the electronics response. All the  $\vec{l}$  parameters introduced in Section XVI are used as input values of the Monte Carlo code. The simulation of the energy deposit uses the standard GEANT4 package [65] describing the energy loss of the various particle types in different materials. The photons of the produced light are tracked one-by-one until they reach a PMT and are possibly detected or until they are absorbed elsewhere. A detailed model of the response of the electronics is also included. Some of the  $\vec{l}$  parameters correlated with the light generation and propagation, as well as with the electronics response, were measured with dedicated laboratory set-ups. These include the  $\tau_i$  and  $w_i$  values (Table III), the PPO and PC emission spectra as functions of the wavelength  $\lambda$ , the PC, PPO, and DMP molar extinction coefficients as functions of  $\lambda$  [20]. The (PC + PPO) refraction index was measured for  $\lambda$ 's from 245.5 nm to 600 nm, while for smaller ultraviolet wavelengths we use the values extrapolated by comparison with the results for PC with benzene. The knowledge of the dispersion relation of the refraction index is an important input in the Monte Carlo because it allows to correctly consider the group velocity for individual photons which is important for the light tracking as well as for the simulation of the Cherenkov light emission.

The various PMTs do not have identical probability to produce a signal when a photon hits the photocathode. The PMT quantum efficiencies as  $\lambda$ -functions have been provided by the manufacturer as well as the distribution of the peak quantum efficiency at  $\lambda = 420$  nm, having a mean value of 24.7% and *rms* of 1.9%. It results from the Borexino data (mono-energetic calibration sources located in the detector center and  $^{14}\text{C}$  events reconstructed within a sphere of 50 cm radius around the detector center) that the  $N_p$  mean value distribution has the *rms* about 1.5 times larger than that resulting from the pure quantum-efficiency curves. In the Monte Carlo we introduce this effect by rescaling the peak value of the quantum-efficiency curve according to the measured efficiency of each PMT.

The simulation reproduces the real distribution of active PMTs, the measured dark noise, and the real gain and the shape of the single-photoelectron response of each PMT following the run-by-run changes. It includes the simulation of the after-pulses and of the measured transit-time spread. The Monte Carlo code finally produces a set of raw data with the same format as that of the measured one, allowing an identical data processing.

It is required that both the energy estimators and the hit-times distributions, which are naturally highly correlated, are fully reproduced by the simulation. The Monte Carlo optimization has been performed iteratively. Several input parameters have been varied until the differences between the measured versus the simulated distributions were minimized. An effort has been made to correctly model all physical phenomena and to minimize

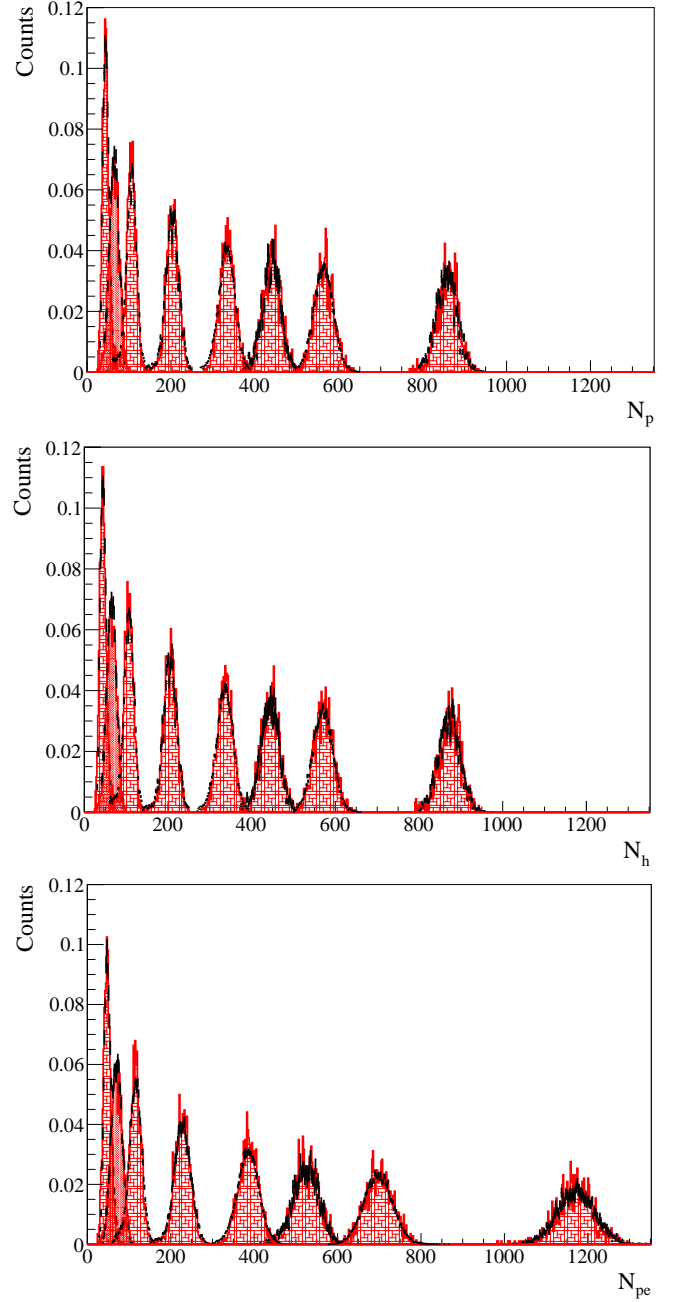


FIG. 47. Energy spectra ( $N_p$ ,  $N_h$ , and  $N_{pe}^d$  variables) of the calibration sources placed in the detector's center: measured data (black lines) versus the Monte Carlo simulation (areas dashed with red lines). The peaks represent (from the left to the right) the total  $\gamma$  decay energy of  $^{57}\text{Co}$ ,  $^{139}\text{Ce}$ ,  $^{203}\text{Hg}$ ,  $^{85}\text{Sr}$ ,  $^{54}\text{Mn}$ ,  $^{65}\text{Zn}$ ,  $^{40}\text{K}$ , and  $^{60}\text{Co}$ .

the number of "effective" parameters.

In particular, the  $\gamma$  sources placed in the detector center have been used to determine the light yield  $Y_0^{\text{ph}}$  and the electron quenching parameter  $kB$ , both introduced in Section VII. The geometry of the  $\gamma$ -source vial has been fully included in the simulation. The  $\gamma$ -sources events have been simulated scanning the values of  $Y_0^{\text{ph}}$

and  $kB$ . The resulting distributions of all the energy estimators have been compared with the measured ones, calculating the  $\chi^2$  as a function of  $Y_0^{\text{ph}}$  and  $kB$ . The value of  $kB$  corresponding to the minimum of the  $\chi^2$  is  $(0.0109 \pm 0.0006) \text{ cm/MeV}$ , compatible with the value obtained analytically as described in Section XVII.1. Figure 47 shows the comparison between the measured energy distributions of the  $\gamma$  sources and the simulation obtained with the best value of  $Y_0^{\text{ph}}$  and  $kB$ . The agreement between the data and the simulation is very good for all the three energy estimators. Table XVIII (obtained using the data of the previous plots) give the measured and the simulated peak positions and the resolutions for the  $N_p$ ,  $N_h$ , and  $N_{pe}$  energy estimators, respectively. The peak position and the resolution of the  $\gamma$  source in the detector center are reproduced by the Monte Carlo with an accuracy better than 1%.

The same energy deposits occurring in various detector positions give rise to non-equal, position-dependent values of the energy estimators,  $N_h$ ,  $N_p$ , and  $N_{pe}$ . This is due to the light absorption, the geometrical effects as for example the presence of the light concentrators mounted on some PMTs, the different response of individual electronics channels as well as non-uniform distribution of non-working electronics chains. The broken PMTs are concentrated close to the bottom of the detector thus giving a higher light loss for off-center events in the bottom hemisphere with respect to the ones in the upper hemisphere.

The geometrical non-uniformity of the energy response has been measured with the radon source comparing the energy estimators of the  $^{214}\text{Po}$   $\alpha$ -peak of the data and the Monte Carlo. The Monte Carlo data has been generated with the input parameters optimized to reproduce the source calibration data located in the detector center. As an example, Fig. 48 demonstrates the  $z$ -dependency of the  $N_h$  estimator both for the data (black circles) and for the Monte Carlo simulation (red stars). Figure 49 shows the percentage difference between the  $N_h$  peak position of the Monte Carlo and the data normalized to the data peak. The source locations within the FVs used for the  $pep$  and  $^7\text{Be}$  neutrino analysis and locations outside both these FVs are shown in different colors. As demonstrated in Fig. 49, the Monte Carlo underestimates the energy for events close to the  $^7\text{Be}$ -FV border by 2% at maximum. For this reason, the events uniformly distributed in this FV are generated with the light yield  $Y_0^{\text{ph}}$  multiplied by a correction factor of about 1.01. The exact value of this correction factor is optimized based on the spectrum of  $^{11}\text{C}$  events uniformly distributed in this FV and selected as described in the Section XV. This correction factor is not included in Fig. 49.

Figure 50 shows the relation between the energy estimators  $N_p$ ,  $N_h$ , and  $N_{pe}$  and the energy for  $\beta$ -particles with positions reconstructed within the  $^7\text{Be}$ -FV. Events have been generated uniformly within a sphere of 3.5 m radius, following the run-by-run variations (described above) during the whole data taking period used in the  $^7\text{Be}$  -neutrino analysis. The relative contribution of the

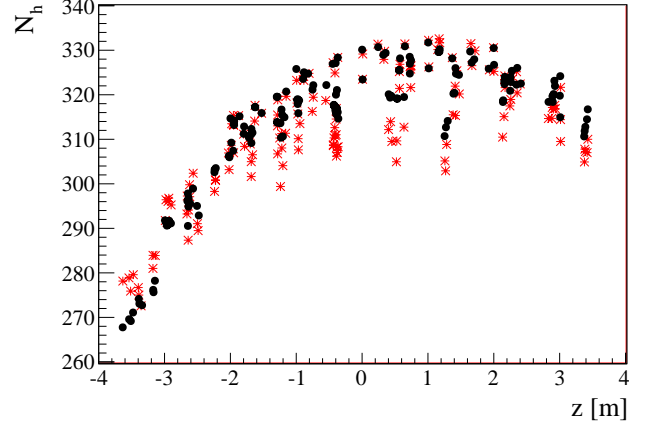


FIG. 48. The  $N_h$  peak position vs  $z$ -coordinate of the  $^{214}\text{Po}$   $\alpha$  peak from the radon calibration source, shown for the data (black circles) and the Monte Carlo simulation (red stars). The various points at fixed  $z$  position correspond to different  $x$  and  $y$  coordinates. The reduction of the collected light for negative  $z$  is due to the concentration of broken PMTs close to the detector's "South pole".

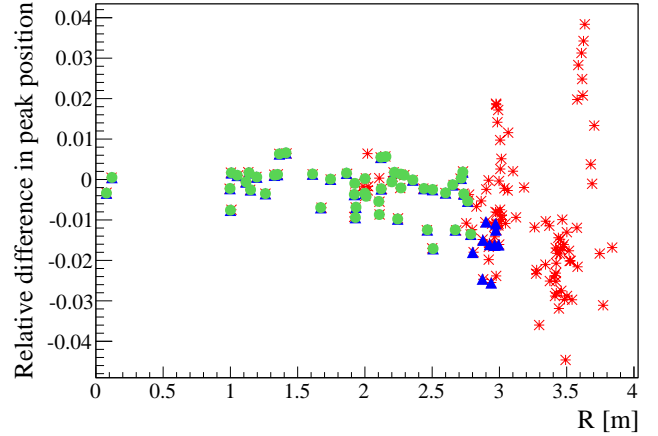


FIG. 49. The relative difference  $\frac{N_h(MC) - N_h(data)}{N_h(data)}$  as a function of the radial position  $R$  of the  $^{214}\text{Po}$   $\alpha$  peak from the radon calibration source. Blue triangles:  $^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  FV, green circles:  $pep$ - $\nu$  FV, red stars: outside both FVs.

Cherenkov light is shown in the Table XVI. The dark noise of the PMTs is included in the simulation according to the run-by-run measured values. As expected,  $N_h$  and  $N_p$  versus energy shows significant deviation from linearity; the difference between them is too small to be visible in the graph. The curve is a fit with a polynomial.  $N_{pe}$  is linear with energy at high energy: the dotted line is the extrapolation of the fit in the low-energy region where small deviation from linearity due to the quenching effect are present.

The Monte Carlo accurately models also the hit-time distributions, making possible to reproduce the shape

Source	$N_p$ peak (data)	$N_p$ peak (MC)	Sigma (data)	Sigma (MC)
$^{57}\text{Co}$	$45.4 \pm 0.2$	$44.6 \pm 0.3$	$8.5 \pm 0.4$	$7.2 \pm 0.7$
$^{139}\text{Ce}$	$65.4 \pm 0.2$	$66.0 \pm 0.4$	$11.3 \pm 0.3$	$11.0 \pm 0.9$
$^{203}\text{Hg}$	$106.4 \pm 0.1$	$105.7 \pm 0.3$	$11.3 \pm 0.3$	$10.1 \pm 0.7$
$^{85}\text{Sr}$	$204.3 \pm 0.2$	$205.9 \pm 0.3$	$15.0 \pm 0.5$	$15.4 \pm 0.6$
$^{54}\text{Mn}$	$333.9 \pm 0.1$	$336.0 \pm 0.1$	$18.4 \pm 0.4$	$18.2 \pm 0.3$
$^{65}\text{Zn}$	$440.1 \pm 0.4$	$440.7 \pm 0.9$	$21.6 \pm 0.3$	$21.9 \pm 0.5$
$^{40}\text{K}$	$564.5 \pm 0.2$	$565.7 \pm 0.7$	$23.6 \pm 0.8$	$23.8 \pm 1.0$
$^{60}\text{Co}$	$858.0 \pm 0.3$	$859.8 \pm 0.7$	$24.2 \pm 0.9$	$24.2 \pm 0.7$

Source	$N_h$ peak (data)	$N_h$ peak (MC)	Sigma (data)	Sigma (MC)
$^{57}\text{Co}$	$45.6 \pm 0.2$	$44.9 \pm 0.3$	$8.6 \pm 0.3$	$7.5 \pm 0.7$
$^{139}\text{Ce}$	$66.0 \pm 0.2$	$66.3 \pm 0.4$	$11.9 \pm 0.5$	$11.3 \pm 0.9$
$^{203}\text{Hg}$	$107.3 \pm 0.1$	$106.8 \pm 0.3$	$11.1 \pm 0.4$	$10.1 \pm 0.8$
$^{85}\text{Sr}$	$205.8 \pm 0.2$	$205.9 \pm 0.3$	$14.4 \pm 0.5$	$14.9 \pm 0.6$
$^{54}\text{Mn}$	$336.9 \pm 0.2$	$336.0 \pm 0.1$	$18.4 \pm 0.4$	$18.4 \pm 0.3$
$^{65}\text{Zn}$	$443.8 \pm 0.4$	$445.0 \pm 0.7$	$21.5 \pm 0.3$	$21.7 \pm 0.5$
$^{40}\text{K}$	$571.1 \pm 0.2$	$571.8 \pm 0.6$	$24.2 \pm 0.5$	$24.6 \pm 0.5$
$^{60}\text{Co}$	$872.4 \pm 0.4$	$874.6 \pm 0.8$	$26.0 \pm 0.9$	$25.8 \pm 0.6$

Source	$N_{pe}$ peak (data)	$N_{pe}$ peak (MC)	Sigma (data)	Sigma (MC)
$^{57}\text{Co}$	$48.8 \pm 0.2$	$47.8 \pm 0.3$	$8.5 \pm 0.4$	$7.7 \pm 0.6$
$^{139}\text{Ce}$	$71.0 \pm 0.2$	$71.6 \pm 0.4$	$14.3 \pm 0.7$	$14.0 \pm 1.3$
$^{203}\text{Hg}$	$116.4 \pm 0.1$	$115.9 \pm 0.4$	$13.3 \pm 0.4$	$13.9 \pm 1.6$
$^{85}\text{Sr}$	$228.5 \pm 0.2$	$229.4 \pm 0.4$	$18.6 \pm 0.7$	$18.9 \pm 0.7$
$^{54}\text{Mn}$	$386.0 \pm 0.2$	$384.9 \pm 0.5$	$24.0 \pm 0.4$	$23.4 \pm 0.4$
$^{65}\text{Zn}$	$525.1 \pm 0.5$	$526.0 \pm 1.0$	$31.3 \pm 0.2$	$30.9 \pm 0.7$
$^{40}\text{K}$	$697.5 \pm 0.2$	$699.1 \pm 0.9$	$33.8 \pm 0.7$	$33.6 \pm 0.6$
$^{60}\text{Co}$	$1171.7 \pm 0.6$	$1169.1 \pm 1.4$	$44.5 \pm 0.4$	$41.2 \pm 1.5$

TABLE XV. Comparison between the measured and Monte Carlo simulated peak positions and the resolutions for the  $\gamma$  calibration sources located in the detector center for the three energy estimators  $N_p$ ,  $N_h$ , and  $N_{pe}$ .

Energy [keV]	$(N_h - N_h^{\text{NoCer}})/N_h$ [%]
250	1.25
500	3.7
1000	5.1
2000	5.6

TABLE XVI. Relative differences between the  $N_h$  and  $N_h^{\text{NoCer}}$  resulting from the Monte Carlo simulations of mono-energetic  $\beta$ 's with and without the generation of the Cherenkov light, respectively.

ergy intervals. Figure 51 compares this  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  variable for the  $^{85}\text{Sr}$  calibration source placed at the position  $(x, y, z) = (0, 0, 3)$  m, as obtained from the data (black line) and from the Monte Carlo simulation (red filled area). Note that this  $\gamma$  source produces the events measured with approximately the same number of hits/photoelectrons as the  $\alpha$  events of  $^{210}\text{Po}$ . In general, for different energies and positions, the Monte Carlo reproduces the shapes of the  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  distributions but a small shift between the measured and simulated distributions may be present. This is at maximum  $\pm 0.002$ , corresponding to one bin in Fig. 51.

## XIX. THE $\alpha$ ENERGY SCALE

variables which has been described in Section XII. As a consequence, the Monte Carlo can then be used to evaluate the efficiency of cuts as described in Section XIII. In addition, it is possible to implement the  $\alpha - \beta$  statistical subtraction described in Section XIV using the Monte Carlo distributions of the  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  parameter for different en-

Though most  $\alpha$  decays produce particles with energy above 4 MeV which is well above the energy range of interest for the determination of both the  $^7\text{Be}$ - and  $pep$ -neutrino interaction rates, the high density of ionization

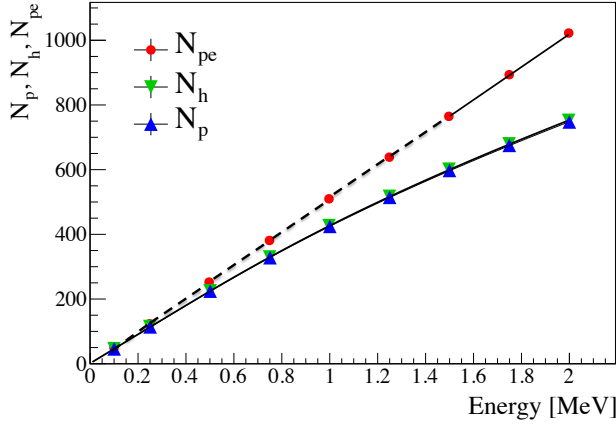


FIG. 50. The energy estimators  $N_p$ ,  $N_h$ , and  $N_{pe}$  versus energy for  $\beta$  events uniformly generated in the  ${}^7\text{Be}$ -FV as obtained with the Monte Carlo simulation.

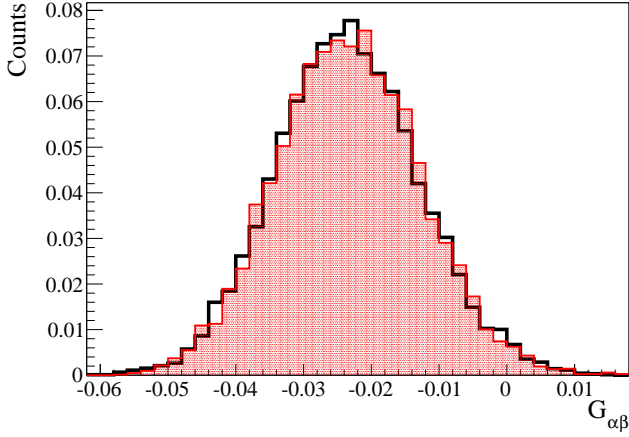


FIG. 51. The  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  variable for the  ${}^{85}\text{Sr}$   $\gamma$ -calibration source placed at the location  $(x, y, z) = (0, 0, 3)$  m, for measured (black line) and Monte Carlo simulated (red filled area) events.

produced by these particles lead to a number of scintillation photons corresponding to electrons with about ten times lower energy and then falling in the energy region of interest. This strong  $\alpha$  quenching was already outlined in Section VII. In order to include the effect of this background in the fit, it is important to determine the  $\alpha$  energy scale. The dominant  $\alpha$  background is originated from  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  which has an average rate of few thousands cpd/100 tons (see Fig. 24). The peak produced in the energy spectrum is well visible and its position is easily fitted. There are however other  $\alpha$  backgrounds (see Tables IX and X) with much lower rate of decay that do not produce a visible peak in the energy spectrum; they can still contribute significantly to the count rate and thus it is important to know their position in the spectrum, so they may be fixed in the fit.

To determine  $\alpha$  energy scale in the fiducial volume used for the  ${}^7\text{Be}$  and  $pep$  neutrino analyses, we considered the  $\alpha$  decays of  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$ ,  ${}^{212}\text{Po}$ ,  ${}^{214}\text{Po}$ ,  ${}^{216}\text{Po}$ , and  ${}^{220}\text{Rn}$ . With the exception of  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$ , the  $\alpha$  events have been identified by searching for time-correlated decays. We used also the higher-rate  $\alpha$ 's of  ${}^{214}\text{Po}$ ,  ${}^{222}\text{Rn}$ , and  ${}^{218}\text{Po}$  from the  ${}^{222}\text{Rn}$  calibration source. Table XVII reports the results of this analysis. By fitting the data of this Table with a linear function, we have obtained the effective quenching factor  $Q_\alpha$  for events distributed in the  ${}^7\text{Be}$ - and  $pep$ -FVs, reported in the last column. We did not attempt to determine  $kB$  for  $\alpha$  particles.

## XX. FIT OF THE ENERGY SPECTRA

The fit of the measured energy spectra is performed using both the analytical and the Monte Carlo-based detector response functions, as described in Sections XVII and XVIII. In both approaches, the free fit parameters are the amplitudes of the solar-neutrino components and of the different backgrounds. In the Monte Carlo approach, once the simulation is correctly optimized, all detector-related parameters are intrinsically built-in. Instead, in the analytical approach, several parameters related to the energy scale are additionally left free in the fit. Thus, while the model for the detector energy response is determined analytically, the values of its parameters are determined by the data. This analytical approach has therefore more free parameters but has the advantage of accounting for the correlations among different parameters while estimating the systematic uncertainties.

The global energy-scale parameters left free in the analytical fit are the FV-averaged detector photoelectron yield  $Y_{det}^{pe}$  (see Eq. 49), and, depending on the choice of the energy estimator, some of the parameters of the response functions defined in Section XVII, as the resolution parameters  $\nu_T$  and  $\sigma_{ped}$ ,  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  parameters of the generalized gamma function or  $a$  and  $b$  parameters of the modified Gaussian. The parameters  $A_i$  (Eq. 46) are fixed to allow the fitter to converge within a reasonable time. The position of the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  peak and the starting point of the  ${}^{11}\text{C}$  spectrum, with respect to the  $\beta$ -energy scale, are also left free in the fit, as the high rate and distinct spectral shapes of these components allow the fitter to determine these values more accurately directly from the normal data than from the source-calibration data. For other background components that include  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma$  emissions, such as  ${}^{214}\text{Pb}$  and  ${}^{222}\text{Rn}$ , their relative positions in the  $\beta$  energy scale are fixed using the source-calibration data.

The Monte Carlo-based fit approach requires the generation of energy spectra of solar neutrinos and all background components. These events have been generated with uniform spatial distribution in the IV and the same position-reconstruction algorithm as the one used for the data (see Section X) has been used to select the events in the FV. Each run included in the analysis has been sim-

Isotope	$E_\alpha$ (keV)	Data set	Mean ( $N_{pe}^d$ )	$Q_\alpha$
$^{210}\text{Po}$	5310	data	$209.5 \pm 0.02$	0.079
$^{222}\text{Rn}^*$	5490	source	$226.5 \pm 0.2$	0.082
$^{218}\text{Po}^*$	6000	source	$268.4 \pm 0.2$	0.089
$^{220}\text{Rn}$	6290	data	$282.1 \pm 3.8$	0.089
$^{216}\text{Po}$	6780	data	$338.6 \pm 3.8$	0.099
$^{214}\text{Po}$	7690	data	$422.1 \pm 3.8$	0.109
$^{214}\text{Po}^*$	7690	source	$422.1 \pm 0.2$	0.109
$^{212}\text{Po}$	8780	data	$548.1 \pm 4.6$	0.125

TABLE XVII. Observed energies of  $\alpha$  decays in  $N_{pe}^d$  energy estimator. Source data (labeled with the asterisk) have been rescaled upwards by a factor  $\simeq 1.8$  such that the  $^{214}\text{Po}$  peak from the source and regular data match. The calibration source in fact showed an additional quenching, probably related to the source-assembly procedures. The last columns shows the quenching factor  $Q_\alpha$  for events distributed in all the  $^7\text{Be}/pep$ -fiducial volume.

ulated individually and the number of simulated events in each run is proportional to the run duration. This ensures to weight the distribution of the working channels in the Monte Carlo in the same way as it is in the real data. The number of generated events is about 100 times higher than the typical number of events expected in the spectrum allowing to neglect the statistical fluctuations of the Monte Carlo spectra. The only exception is the  $^{210}\text{Po}$ .

The fit of the energy spectra was fully sufficient to extract the  $^7\text{Be}$  solar neutrino interaction rate (Section XXII). However, to extract the  $pep$  and CNO solar neutrino results (Section XXV), the multivariate fit, including apart the energy spectra also the PS-BDT and radial distributions, was developed. This fit approach is described in detail in Section XXI.

## XXI. MULTIVARIATE FIT

The detection of  $pep$  and CNO neutrinos is more challenging than the  $^7\text{Be}$  one, as their expected interaction rates are  $\sim 10$  times lower, only a few counts per day in a 100 ton target. The  $pep$  neutrino interaction rate and the limits of the CNO neutrino rate have been determined by extending the fitting procedure used to evaluate the  $^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  interaction rate (described in Section XX): the energy spectra were simultaneously fit together with the distribution of the PS-BDT parameter and with the radial distribution of events. We have used a multivariate approach based on the maximization of the "total" binned likelihood function  $L_T(\vec{\theta})$ , which depends on a set of parameters  $\vec{\theta}$  and is a product of four factors:

$$L_T(\vec{\theta}) = L_E^{\text{TFC}_{\text{sub}}}(\vec{\theta}) \cdot L_E^{\text{TFC}_{\text{tagged}}}(\vec{\theta}) \cdot L_{\text{BDT}}(\vec{\theta}) \cdot L_{\text{Rad}}(\vec{\theta}), \quad (73)$$

where  $L_E^{\text{TFC}_{\text{sub}}}(\vec{\theta})$  is the likelihood function of the energy spectrum obtained after applying the TFC method (see Subsection XV.1) to reduce the  $^{11}\text{C}$  content;

$L_E^{\text{TFC}_{\text{tagged}}}(\vec{\theta})$  is the likelihood of the complementary energy spectrum containing events tagged by the TFC;  $L_{\text{BDT}}(\vec{\theta})$  is the likelihood of the PS-BDT parameter, and finally  $L_{\text{Rad}}(\vec{\theta})$  refers to the likelihood of the radial distribution.

The first two terms in the product of Eq. 73 are the standard Poisson likelihoods:

$$L_E^{\text{TFC}_{\text{sub}}}(\vec{\theta}) = \prod_{i=1}^{n_e} \frac{\lambda_i(\vec{\theta})^{k_i} e^{-\lambda_i(\vec{\theta})}}{k_i!}, \quad (74)$$

where the product is over all the energy bins  $i$ ,  $n_e$  is the total number of energy bins,  $\lambda_i(\vec{\theta})$  is the expected number of entries in the bin  $i$  given the fit parameters  $\vec{\theta}$ , and  $k_i$  is the measured number of entries in the bin  $i$ . A similar relation holds for  $L_E^{\text{TFC}_{\text{tagged}}}(\vec{\theta})$ .

The two energy spectra (TFC-tagged and TFC-subtracted) are fit keeping the rate of the most part of the components in common. The only species whose rates are different parameters in the two energy spectra are of course  $^{11}\text{C}$  but also  $^{10}\text{C}$  and  $^6\text{He}$ , since their origin is cosmogenic and it may be correlated with neutron production. Table XVIII shows the different solar-neutrino fluxes and backgrounds considered in the fit.

Two different energy estimators have been used to fit the energy spectrum to get the  $pep$  and CNO neutrino results with the multivariate approach:  $N_h$  and  $N_{pe}^d$ . The probability density function (PDF) for  $N_h$  was produced with the Monte Carlo method while the one for  $N_{pe}^d$  with the analytical method.

The definition of the last two terms in  $L_T(\vec{\theta})$  in Eq. 73 considers that the PDFs of the corresponding variables are produced from the data (*e.g.*, the pulse-shape PDF for  $\beta^-$  is taken from tagged  $^{214}\text{Bi}$ ). The statistics are limited and there is no analytical model to produce precise multi-dimensional PDFs. Therefore, we have projected the events, integrated over an energy range larger than the energy-spectrum binning, into one-dimensional histograms of the PS-BDT and radial distribution variables and computed the corresponding likelihood. In this case, we introduce a correlation between the number of counts



Species	Rate (free or fixed)	Common to both spectra	PS-BDT Rad. distrib.	
Solar neutrino				
$pep$	free	Yes	$\beta^-$	Bulk
CNO	free	Yes	$\beta^-$	Bulk*
${}^7\text{Be}$	free	Yes	$\beta^-^*$	Bulk*
$pp$	fixed to 133 cpd/100 ton	Yes	$\beta^-^*$	Bulk*
${}^8\text{B}$	fixed to 0.49 cpd/100 ton	Yes	$\beta^-$	Bulk
Background				
${}^{214}\text{Pb}$	fixed to 1.95 cpd/100 ton	Yes	$\beta^-$	Bulk*
${}^{210}\text{Bi}$	free	Yes	$\beta^-$	Bulk*
${}^{10}\text{C}$	free	No	$\beta^+$	Bulk
${}^{11}\text{C}$	free	No	$\beta^+$	Bulk
Ext. ${}^{214}\text{Bi}$	free	Yes	$\beta^-$	External
Ext. ${}^{40}\text{K}$	free	Yes	$\beta^-$	External
Ext. ${}^{208}\text{Tl}$	free	Yes	$\beta^-$	External
${}^6\text{He}$	free	No	$\beta^-$	Bulk
${}^{40}\text{K}$	free	Yes	$\beta^-$	Bulk
${}^{85}\text{Kr}$	free	Yes	$\beta^-^*$	Bulk*
${}^{234m}\text{Pa}$	free	Yes	$\beta^-$	Bulk

TABLE XVIII. Background and neutrino species considered in the multivariate fit. The  $pp$  and  ${}^8\text{B}$  solar neutrino interaction rates have been fixed to the central values from the high-metallicity solar model including MSW-LMA (see Table II). The value for  ${}^{214}\text{Pb}$  was estimated to be  $1.95 \pm 0.07$  cpd/100 ton from the  ${}^{214}\text{Bi} - {}^{214}\text{Po}$  coincidence rate. The third column refers to whether the rates for a species in both the TFC-subtracted and TFC-tagged spectra are a parameter with the same value for both spectra (Yes) or they are left free to assume different values (No). The last two columns refer to the PS-BDT parameter and the expected radial distribution in the FV. The asterisk (\*) denotes species that, due to the energy range considered for the fits in the PS-BDT or radial position dimensions, are effectively excluded from the corresponding fit.

in different histograms, as events that are in the energy spectrum will also be entries in the projections. To handle this issue, we normalize the PDFs of the hypothesis to the total number of entries in the projected data histograms to fit. Consequently, we define the likelihood of the PS-BDT parameter as:

$$L_{\text{BDT}}(\vec{\theta}) = \prod_{j=1}^m \frac{a \lambda_j(\vec{\theta})^{k_j} e^{-a \lambda_j(\vec{\theta})}}{k_j!} \quad (75)$$

the scaling factor,  $a$ , enforces the normalization and is set such that

$$N = a \sum_{j=1}^m \lambda_j(\vec{\theta}), \quad (76)$$

where  $N$  is the total number of entries in the projected histogram. Here,  $\lambda_j(\vec{\theta})$  represents the expected content of bin  $j$  of the PS-BDT histogram,  $k_j$  is the actual number of entries in that bin, and  $m$  is the total number of bins of the PS-BDT histogram.

$L_{\text{Rad}}(\vec{\theta})$  is defined in a way similar to  $L_{\text{BDT}}(\vec{\theta})$ . The radial dependence is assumed uniform for all the species except the external background. The PDFs of the radial distribution of the external background and its energy dependence has been obtained with the Monte Carlo, as described in Section XI.

We have performed Monte Carlo tests with data-like samples to show that the statistical interpretation of likelihood-ratio tests holds for our computed total likelihood.

## XXII. THE ${}^7\text{Be}$ -NEUTRINO INTERACTION RATE

The first measurement of the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate was published by Borexino after only few months of data taking [5] and an update was reported in [6]. The accuracy of those measurements was significantly improved in 2011 [7] using the results of the calibration campaign (see Section VIII), a better understanding of the detector response, and increased statistics. The data were collected in the period from May 16<sup>th</sup>, 2007 to May 8<sup>th</sup>, 2010 and they corresponds to 740.7 live-days after cuts and to 153.6 ton  $\times$  year fiducial exposure. The resulting interaction rate of the 862 keV  ${}^7\text{Be}$  line [7] is:

$$R({}^7\text{Be}) = 46.0 \pm 1.5(\text{stat}) {}^{+1.5}_{-1.6}(\text{sys}) \text{ cpd/100 ton} \quad (77)$$

and its corresponding  $\nu_e$ -equivalent flux is  $(2.79 \pm 0.13) \times 10^9 \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ . The  $\nu_e$ -equivalent flux is calculated by assuming that the total observed interaction rate is due to electron flavor neutrinos only. Considering the 3-flavor neutrino oscillations, the equivalent flux is (4.43

$\pm 0.22) \times 10^9 \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ , which can be compared with the expected SSM flux of Table II.

The  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate has been obtained fitting only the energy spectra (Section XX). The lower bound of the fit region was chosen to avoid pile-up between two  ${}^{14}\text{C}$   $\beta$  decays ( $Q_\beta = 156 \text{ keV}$ ) and it corresponds to 270 keV. The higher bound of the fit region is 1250 keV in the analytical fit approach, in which the contribution of the external background ( ${}^{208}\text{Tl}$ ,  ${}^{214}\text{Bi}$ ) is not included. The Monte Carlo fit includes the simulated spectrum of the external background allowing to extend the fit region up to 1600 keV.

The weights for the  ${}^7\text{Be}$  neutrino signal and the main radioactive background components ( ${}^{85}\text{Kr}$ ,  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$ ,  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$ , and  ${}^{11}\text{C}$ ) were left as free parameters in the fit, while the contributions of the  $pp$ ,  $pep$ , CNO, and  ${}^8\text{B}$  solar neutrinos were fixed to the GS98-SSM predicted rates assuming MSW-LMA neutrino oscillations (see Table II).

The 384 and 862 keV branches of the  ${}^7\text{Be}$  solar neutrinos (see Fig. 1) are combined into a single spectrum. The production ratio between the two branches is 10.52 : 89.48. Accounting for the energy-dependent survival probability and interaction cross-sections, the ratio between the interaction rates is 3.9 : 96.1. Similarly, we have combined the  ${}^{13}\text{N}$ ,  ${}^{15}\text{O}$ , and  ${}^{17}\text{F}$  recoil spectra into a single spectrum, referred to as the CNO solar neutrino spectrum. The rates of  ${}^{222}\text{Rn}$ ,  ${}^{218}\text{Po}$ , and  ${}^{214}\text{Pb}$  surviving the cuts were fixed using the measured rate of  ${}^{214}\text{Bi} - {}^{214}\text{Po}$  delayed coincidence events.

Due to the slight eccentricity  $\varepsilon = 0.01671$  of the Earth's orbit around the Sun, the flux  $\Phi_E$  of solar neutrinos reaching the Earth is time dependent:

$$\Phi_E(t) = \frac{R_{\text{Sun}}}{4\pi r^2(t)} \simeq \frac{R_{\text{Sun}}}{4\pi r_0^2} \left( 1 + 2\varepsilon \cos\left(\frac{2\pi t}{T}\right) \right) \quad (78)$$

where  $R_{\text{Sun}}$  is the neutrino production rate at the Sun,  $t$  is the time in days from January 1<sup>th</sup>,  $T$  is one year,  $r(t)$  is the time dependent Earth-to-Sun distance and  $r_0$  is its mean value. We are interested in the neutrino flux averaged over one year, while the data acquisition periods are unevenly distributed over a few years time interval. We have calculated the expected flux for each period used in the data analysis using Eq. 78. Thus, we have obtained the correction to be applied to convert the measured flux into the yearly averaged flux. The result is a multiplicative factor of 1.0003, a negligible correction within the accuracy of the present data set.

All events accepted in the final energy spectra used in the fit have to pass the selection criteria discussed in Subsection XIII.1. As described in Section XIII, the fit procedure has been implemented both with and without statistical subtraction of the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}-\alpha$  peak (Section XIV). When statistical subtraction is not applied, the additional  $G_{\alpha\beta}$ -based energy-dependent cut described in Subsection XIII.3 is used. Figure 52, Fig. 53, and Fig. 54 show some examples of fit results obtained using various procedures. Figure 52 refers to the Monte Carlo fit without  $\alpha - \beta$  statistical subtraction. The fit is performed by minimizing the  $\chi^2$  between the measured and Monte

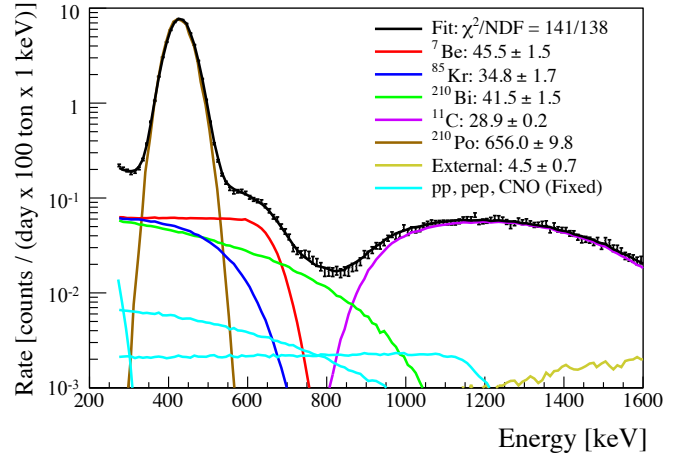


FIG. 52. Example of fit of the energy spectrum obtained using the Monte Carlo method without  $\alpha - \beta$  statistical subtraction. The fit was done using the  $N_h$  energy estimator. After the fit, the horizontal axis was converted into energy scale in keV. The values of the best-fit parameters, the rates of individual species, are given in cpd/100 ton.

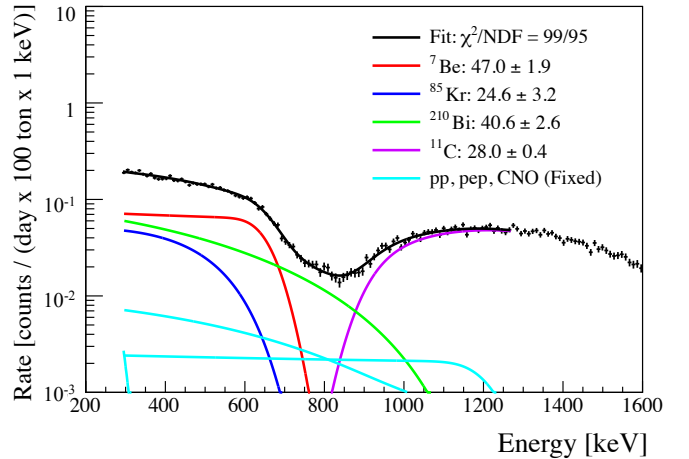


FIG. 53. Example of fit of the energy spectrum obtained using the analytical method with  $\alpha - \beta$  statistical subtraction. The fit was done using the  $N_{pe}^d$  energy estimator. After the fit, the horizontal axis was converted into energy scale in keV. The values of the best-fit parameters, the rates of individual species, are given in cpd/100 ton.

Carlo generated spectra using the  $N_h$  energy estimator. Finally, after the fit procedure, the plot is transformed in the energy scale in keV. Similarly, Fig. 53 shows an example of analytical fit using the energy estimator  $N_{pe}^d$  with  $\alpha - \beta$  statistical subtraction. The plot in Fig. 54 demonstrates the fit using the  $N_p$  variable based on the analytical approach without  $\alpha - \beta$  statistical subtraction while Fig. 55 shows its corresponding residuals.

The shape of the  ${}^{85}\text{Kr}$  energy spectrum and the one due to the electron recoil following a  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction are very similar, as can be seen by comparing the blue

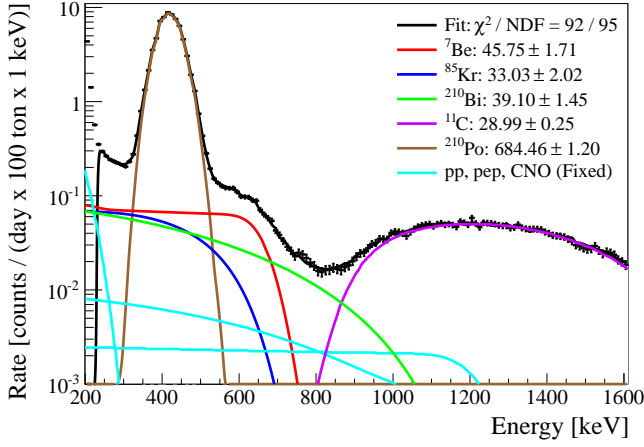


FIG. 54. Example of fit of the energy spectrum obtained using the analytical method without  $\alpha - \beta$  statistical subtraction. The fit was done using the  $N_p$  energy estimator. After the fit, the horizontal axis was converted into energy scale in keV. The values of the best-fit parameters, the rates of individual species, are given in cpd/100 ton.

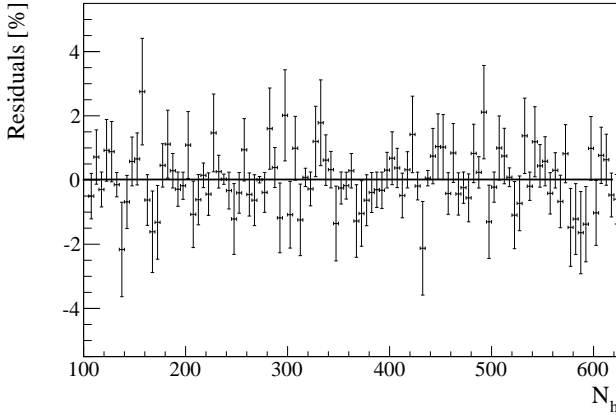


FIG. 55. Typical example of the distribution of the residuals of the fit. This plot corresponds to the fit shown in Fig. 54.

and red curves in Fig. 52, Fig. 53, and Fig. 54. These two fit components are correlated and their relative weight is influenced by details of the energy scale. The amount of  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  returned by the fit is also sensitive to the count rate in the low-energy portion of the spectrum at the beginning of the fit region. These effects translate in a dependence of the resulting  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  rate on the fit procedure (analytical or Monte Carlo) and, particularly, on the use or not of the  $\alpha - \beta$  statistical subtraction. The statistical subtraction procedure is generally the one giving the lowest krypton count rate. The similarity of the spectrum of  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  and  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  produces a systematic uncertainty in the determination of the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate. However, the absolute value of the uncertainty associated to the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate is smaller than the one associated to the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$ : the reason is that the determination

of the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate is also constrained by the energy region between 550 and 750 keV where the weight of  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  is significantly reduced. The accuracy of the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  direct measurement obtained with the rare delayed coincidence branch (see Subsection XI.3.2) is not sufficient to constrain the weight of the krypton in the fit. The different fit approaches produce slightly different values for the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  rate; all these values are self consistent and consistent with the direct measurement. The results displayed in the Fig. 52, Fig. 53, and Fig. 54 clearly show this effect. Table XIX summarizes the results about the background rates obtained by the fit of the energy spectra.

The CNO- $\nu$  and  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  spectra are very similar. This trend is weakly influencing the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate measurement.

All the available fit methods have been used to study these and other systematic effects on the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  rate. The evaluation has been performed repeating the fit procedure many times by varying one parameter and fixing all the others, and then repeating this procedure for all the relevant parameters. These are the binning, the choice of the energy estimator, the energy range used in the fit, the use or not of the  $\alpha - \beta$  statistical subtraction and the energy region where this procedure is applied, the exact values of the fixed components of the neutrino spectra varied within the theoretical uncertainties, and the amount of residual radon correlated background rates inferred from the  $^{214}\text{Bi} - ^{214}\text{Po}$  coincidence rates.

The energy scale is a free fit parameter in the analytical method while it is fixed in the Monte Carlo method. In the Monte Carlo method the uncertainty of the fit results originated by the one of the energy scale has been studied by repeating the fit using Monte Carlo energy spectra obtained with the  $\beta$  energy scale changed by  $\pm 2\%$ . It results that changes of the energy scale larger than  $\pm 1.5\%$  produce fit with not acceptable  $\chi^2$  and they were discarded.

We have built the distributions of all the fit results obtained by scanning the values of the above listed parameters with all the fit methods; we have discarded those fits producing a non acceptable  $\chi^2$  and then we considered as systematic uncertainty the *rms* of the resulting distribution. The systematic effect due to the uncertainty in the energy scale when all the remaining parameters are kept fixed at their best values produces a systematic uncertainty of 2.7% on the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate. The contribution of all other listed effects is included in the Table XX as "Fit Methods" and it amounts to 2%.

TABLE XIX. Background rates obtained fitting the energy spectra used to measure the  $^7\text{Be}$  neutrinos interaction rate.

Species	rate [cpd/100 ton]
$^{85}\text{Kr}$	$31.2 \pm 1.7(\text{stat}) \pm 4.7(\text{syst})$
$^{210}\text{Bi}$	$41.0 \pm 1.5(\text{stat}) \pm 2.3(\text{syst})$
$^{11}\text{C}$	$28.5 \pm 0.2(\text{stat}) \pm 0.7(\text{syst})$

Source	Value [%]
Trigger efficiency and stability	<0.1
Live-time	0.04
Scintillator density	0.05
Sacrifice of cuts	0.1
Fiducial volume	+0.5 -1.3
Fit methods	2.0
Energy response	2.7
Total Systematic Uncertainty	+3.4 -3.6

TABLE XX. Systematic uncertainties of the  $^7\text{Be}$  solar neutrino rate measurement.

The additional important source of systematic uncertainty is the knowledge of the FV since it determines the target mass and, thus, the neutrino interaction rate calculation. Details about this item and the accuracy of the FV uncertainty obtained using the calibration sources are described in [34]. Here we only recall that the uncertainty about the FV definition has been evaluated by selecting the source data corresponding to source positions at the border of the  $^7\text{Be}$ -FV. For this data set, the distributions of  $\Delta R$  and  $\Delta z$ , i.e. the difference between the reconstructed and the nominal value of the radius and of the vertical coordinate, were calculated. The FV systematic uncertainty results from the comparison between the nominal value (86.01 m<sup>3</sup>, see Table VI) and the values obtained by varying  $R$  and  $z$  between the minimum and maximum  $\Delta R$  and  $\Delta z$ . Based on this, the FV contribution to the total systematic uncertainty budget of the  $^7\text{Be}$  neutrino rate is +0.5% and -1.3%. The systematic shift of 4 cm in the  $z$  direction described in Section X has a negligible impact on the selected FV, i.e. less than 0.01%.

The live-time for each run is calculated very precisely by taking the time difference between the first and the last valid trigger. The trigger time is obtained from a GPS clock having 100 ns accuracy. However, there are additional sources of systematic uncertainties related to the live-time evaluation. As it results from Table XX, the overall value of this uncertainty is small: the 0.04% is dominated by the contribution associated to the 300 ms dead time vetoing the detector after each ID muon. The uncertainty due to all the electronics and DAQ dead times amounts to only few  $10^{-3}\%$  and other cuts which involve vetoing sections of the detector for varying periods of time give a contribution of the same order.

Table XX summarizes all the systematic uncertainties described above.

### XXIII. SEARCH FOR A DAY-NIGHT ASYMMETRY IN THE $^7\text{Be}$ -NEUTRINO INTERACTION RATE

We have searched for a possible asymmetry between the day and night  $^7\text{Be}$ -solar-neutrino interaction rates.

As discussed later in Section XXVI, this asymmetry is expected in particular regions of the oscillation parameters or it could be a signal for non-standard neutrino interaction.

The day-night asymmetry  $A_{dn}$  of the  $^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  count rate is defined as:

$$A_{dn} = 2 \frac{R_N - R_D}{R_N + R_D} = \frac{R_{\text{diff}}}{\langle R \rangle}, \quad (79)$$

where  $R_N$  and  $R_D$  are the night and day  $^7\text{Be}$ -neutrino interaction rates,  $R_{\text{diff}}$  is their difference, and  $\langle R \rangle$  is their mean.

With the data collected in the same period used to measure the  $^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  interaction rate, we have found a result well consistent with absence of asymmetry [8]:

$$A_{dn} = -0.001 \pm 0.012(\text{stat}) \pm 0.007(\text{sys}). \quad (80)$$

The data have been classified as belonging to day or night according to the value of the angle  $\theta_z$  between the vertical  $z$ -axis of the detector (positive upwards) and the vector pointing from the Sun to the detector, following the definition of [66]. During the day  $\theta_z$  is in the interval from  $-180^\circ$  to  $-90^\circ$  while during the night it is in the interval from  $-90^\circ$  to  $0^\circ$ . Our day and night live-times are 360.25 and 380.63 days, respectively. We have built the distribution of the  $\theta_z$  corresponding to the live-time (experimental exposure function). This is shown in black continuous line in Fig. 56 and compared with the ideal exposure (red dotted line) corresponding to a data taking period of three years without interruptions. The experimental exposure correctly accounts for any interruption in the data taking and it is slightly asymmetric. The shape of the distribution of the events as a function of  $\theta_z$  should match exactly the experimental exposure function if none day-night asymmetry of neutrino rate is present. Equivalently, if there is no day-night asymmetry, the distribution of the data as a function of  $\theta_z$  normalized to the experimental exposure function should be flat.

While the data-taking period is the same as for the  $^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  interaction rate analysis, the fiducial volume here used is larger: we have selected the events whose position is reconstructed in a spherical fiducial volume of 3.3 m radius in order to increase the size of the data sample. This FV corresponds to 132.50 ton fiducial mass containing  $4.382 \times 10^{31} e^-$  (a factor 1.75 larger than the  $^7\text{Be}$ -FV). The additional external background that enters in the spectrum is not expected to be different during the day and night time. Figure 57 compares the energy spectrum ( $N_h$  energy estimator) obtained selecting events in different volumes and, as an example, during the day time. The change of the shape of the spectrum is mostly due to the contribution of the external background (higher at larger radius). The energy region where the signal-to-background is maximal is the interval 550 – 800 keV ( $N_h$  in the interval 244 – 348). The number of events falling in this energy window has been plotted as a function of  $\theta_z$  and then this resulting distribution has been normalized to the experimental exposure function (black solid line from Fig. 56) obtaining the result shown in Fig. 58.

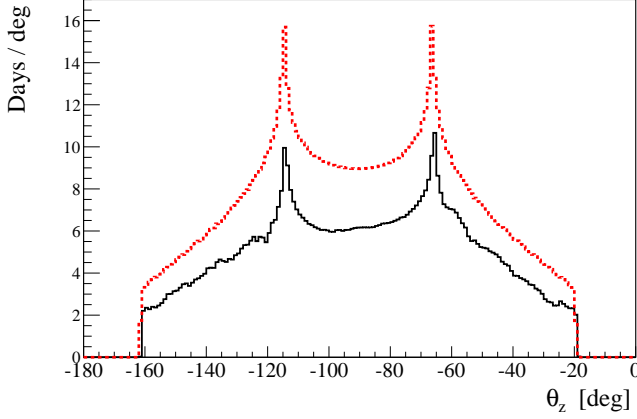


FIG. 56. The experimental exposure function (black continuous line) and the ideal exposure function (red dotted line) corresponding to 3 years of data taking without interruptions at LNGS, as functions of the  $\theta_z$  angle (1 deg/bin). The interval from  $-180^\circ$  to  $-90^\circ$  corresponds to day (360.25 days) and the one from  $-90^\circ$  to  $0^\circ$  to night time (380.63 days). We recall that at LNGS latitude the Sun is never at the zenith.

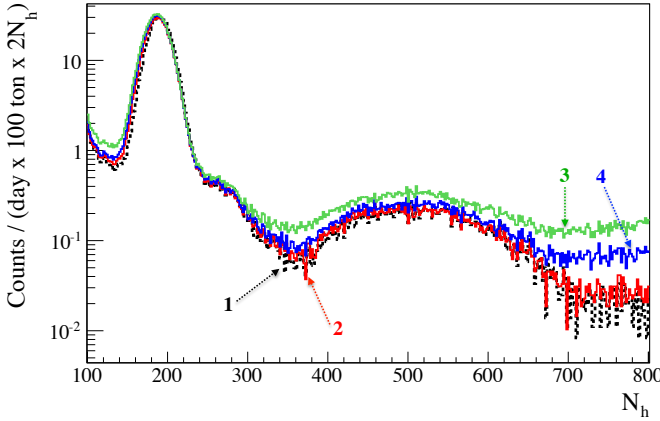


FIG. 57. Energy spectra ( $N_h$ ) during the day time in different volumes. The two curves showing the lowest count rate and almost superimposed have been obtained selecting events within the standard FV used for the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  rate analysis (1 - black dotted line) and within a sphere of 3 m radius (2 - red solid line). The curve with the highest count rate (3 - green) shows the events selected within a 3.5 m radius sphere while the curve with the intermediate count rate (4 - blue) refers to a 3.3 m radius sphere.

Note that the experimental exposure function has been corrected to take into account the change of the neutrino flux due to the annual variation of the Earth-Sun distance: in case of slightly different day and night life-times during the year this annual variation could mimic a fake day-night effect. In our conditions this effect increases the  ${}^7\text{Be}$  count rate by 0.37 % during the day and it decreases it by 0.39 % during the night. The fit with a straight line of the data of Fig. 58 gives a  $\chi^2$  probability

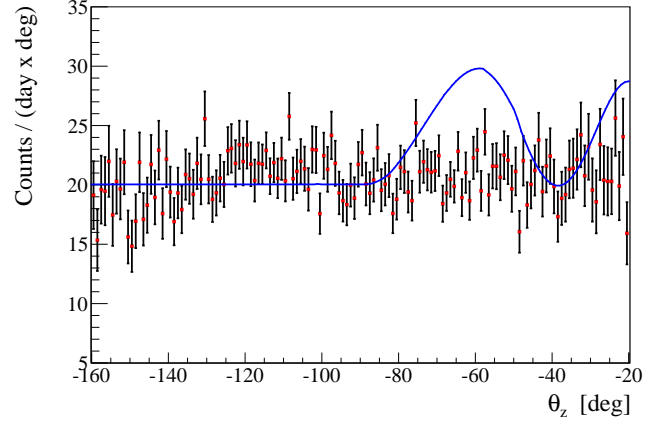


FIG. 58. Normalized  $\theta_z$ -angle distribution of the events in the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  energy window and reconstructed within the enlarged FV. The effect of the Earth elliptical orbit has been removed. The fit with a flat straight line yields  $\chi^2/\text{NDF} = 141.1/139$ . The blue solid line shows the expected effect with the LOW solution  $\Delta m_{12}^2 = 1.0 \cdot 10^{-7} \text{ eV}^2$  and  $\tan \theta_{12}^2 = 0.955$ .

of 0.44 demonstrating that the two samples are statistically identical. We conclude that the rate of the events in the 550 – 800 keV energy window including both the background and the  ${}^7\text{Be}$  solar neutrino induced events is consistent with the hypothesis of no day-night effect. A similar result is obtained using the events in the smaller fiducial volume used for the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  rate analysis.

Note that a similar plot referred to the energy region dominated by the cosmogenic  ${}^{11}\text{C}$  (800 – 1600 keV) when fitted with a constant line it returns a bad  $\chi^2$  ( $\chi^2/\text{NDF} = 216/141$ ) indicating that the rate of the events as a function of  $\theta_z$  does not follow the experimental exposure function of Fig. 56. This is not surprising since  ${}^{11}\text{C}$  has a cosmogenic origin. The annual modulation of the muons has been discussed in [25] and it is not related to the Earth-Sun distance.

The asymmetry of the neutrino signal alone and thus the  $A_{dn}$  value is determined with limited precision by fitting the day and night spectra separately. The most sensitive way to extract  $A_{dn}$  is obtained by *i*) assuming that the main background like  ${}^{85}\text{Kr}$  and  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$  are the same during the day and during the night, *ii*) subtracting the day and night spectra properly normalized to the same life-time and *iii*) searching for a residual component  $R_{\text{diff}}$  having the shape of the electron recoil due to  ${}^7\text{Be}$  neutrinos in the resulting spectrum (following the second term in Eq. 79).

The subtraction produces a flat spectrum consistent with zero except in the region of the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  peak as shown in Fig. 59. The peak arises from the combination of the decay of the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  background ( $\tau_{1/2} = 138.38$  days) with the distribution of the day and night live-time during the 3 years of data taking. The  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  count rate was highest at the time of the initial filling in May 2007, and has since decayed. Therefore, the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  count rate has been overall higher during the summers (when days are longer),

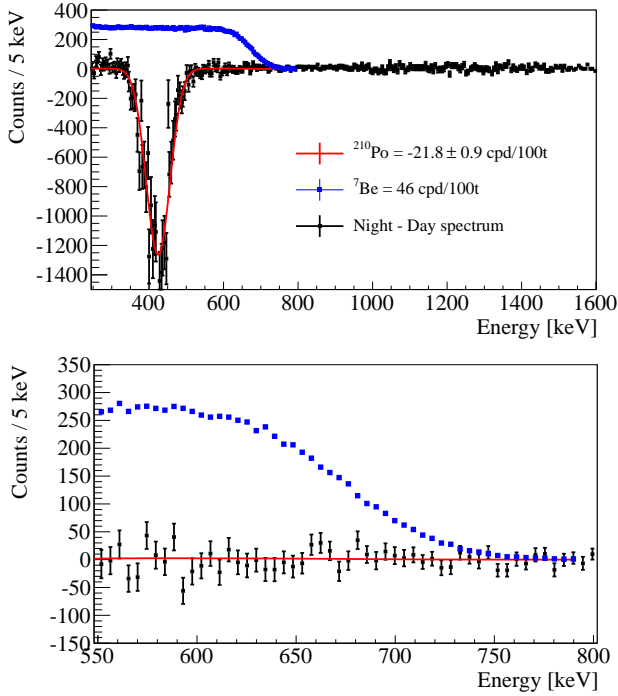


FIG. 59. Difference of the night and day spectra in the enlarged FV. The top panel shows an extended energy range including the region dominated by the  $^{11}\text{C}$  background while the bottom panel is a zoom in the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  energy window. The fit is performed in the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  energy region (between 250 and 800 keV) with the residual  $^{210}\text{Po}$  spectrum and the electron recoil spectrum due to the  $^7\text{Be}$  solar neutrino interaction. The blue curve plots the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  spectrum used in the fit with the amplitude  $\langle R \rangle = 46$  cpd/100 ton. The residual  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  resulting from the fit is too small to be shown.

leading to a noticeable effect in the subtracted spectrum. The spectrum of the difference has been fitted to obtain the residual  $^{210}\text{Po}$  decay rate and the  $R_{\text{diff}}$  value for the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate. The fit between 250 and 800 keV gives  $R_{\text{diff}} = 0.04 \pm 0.57$  (stat) cpd/100 ton. There are only two major sources of systematic uncertainties that contribute to the final result: the fit procedure and the variation of the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  content with time. We have repeated the analysis fitting the spectrum of the difference of the day and night counts obtained after having applied the statistical subtraction of the  $^{210}\text{Po}$  separately from the day and night spectra. In this case we only have  $R_{\text{diff}}$  as a single fit component. Then we also repeated the analysis using the data of different periods corresponding to different mean values of the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  decay rate. The  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  rate changed smoothly during the data taking time and in principle it should not produce a significant day-night asymmetry unless for effects due to not evenly distributed day and night live-times.

Table XXI reports different contributions to the systematic uncertainty. The one associated to the fiducial volume does not enter in the determination of  $R_{\text{diff}}$ . The energy scale in-determination that may affect the shape

of the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  recoil spectrum produces negligible effects.

## XXIV. ANNUAL MODULATION OF THE $^7\text{Be}$ -NEUTRINO INTERACTION RATE

We present here novel results about the search for the annual modulation of the  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate induced by the annual variation of the distance between the Earth and the Sun. Similar results for  $^8\text{B}$  solar neutrinos have been reported in [67], [68]. The flux of neutrinos reaching the detector is expected to sinusoidally vary versus time with one year period according to Eq. 78 and with a peak-to-peak amplitude of  $\simeq 7\%$ .

### XXIV.1. Analysis approach

The spectral-fit analysis developed to measure the total average  $^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate does not work well to search for its annual modulation. The main reason is that, with only three years of data, the statistics is not sufficient to allow independent spectral fits in sub-periods that are at the same time long enough to give meaningful fits and sparse enough to yield a good sensitivity to the modulation.

For this reason we have implemented three alternative analysis approaches, optimized for their sensitivity to the modulation.

In all of them, the starting point is the definition of a set of time bins  $t_k$  and of the corresponding normalized event rate  $R(t_k)$ , obtained by selecting all events falling within a given energy window and by applying a proper time normalization.

In the first approach (fit of the rate versus time) we fitted  $R(t_k)$  as a function of time searching for the sinusoidal signal of Eq. 78.

The second approach consists of using the Lomb-Scargle method [69], [70] to extract the periodical signal from  $R(t_k)$ . The Lomb-Scargle method is an extension of the Fast Fourier Transform, well suited in our conditions since it allows to account for data sample not evenly distributed in time (there are in fact time gaps in the Borexino data taking) and it determines the statistical significance of the identified periodicities.

The third method is the Empirical Mode Decomposition (EMD) [71]. EMD decomposes a given signal into

Source of uncertainty	Uncertainty on $A_{dn}$
Live-time	$< 5 \cdot 10^{-4}$
Cut efficiencies	0.001
Variation of $^{210}\text{Bi}$ with time	$\pm 0.005$
Fit procedure	$\pm 0.005$
Total systematic uncertainty	0.007

TABLE XXI. List of systematic uncertainties on  $A_{dn}$ .



time-dependent components called *intrinsic mode function* (IMF) [72], which form a quasi-orthogonal and complete set. The method provides, as in the case of the Fast Fourier Transform, a global power spectrum by summing the instantaneous frequencies of each IMF weighted by the square average of the corresponding amplitude. The amplitude and the phase can be thought of as a distribution of instantaneous information contained in each IMF.

The IMFs (also called modes) are extracted from the original function through an iterative procedure (*sifting* algorithm). The basic idea is to interpolate at each step the local maxima and minima of the initial signal, calculate the mean value of these interpolating functions, and subtract it from the initial signal. Then, we repeat the same procedure also on the residual signal (so after the relative subtraction) until suitable stopping criteria are satisfied. These latter (slightly different in literature according to each approach, e.g. [71], [74]) are numerical conditions fixed to give the IMFs two general features, in common with the harmonic functions: first, the number of extrema (local maxima and minima) has to match the number of zero crossing points or differ from it at most by one; second, the mean value of each IMF must be zero.

The  $i$ -th IMF obtained by the  $k$ -th iteration is given by

$$\text{IMF}_i(t) = x_i(t) - \sum_{j=1}^k m_{ij}, \quad (81)$$

where  $x_i(t)$  is the residual signal when all " $i - 1$ " IMF's have been subtracted from the original signal  $R(t)$ ,  $x_0(t) = R(t)$ , and the  $m_{ij}$  are the average of the max and min envelopes at each  $j$ -th iteration. Following the results of a detailed study performed with simulations, we have fixed the number of sifting iteration to 20, instead of around 10 as suggested in [76]. The number 20 guarantees a better symmetry of the IMF with respect to its mean value, preserving the dyadic property of the method (that is each IMF has an average frequency that is the half of that of the previous one, see [77]).

In order to avoid meaningless or negative quantities, the instantaneous frequency, the amplitude, and the phase distributions are extracted from the IMF's by means of the Normalized Hilbert Transform [78].

Having a signal  $R(t)$  sampled in time as in our case ( $R(t_k)$ ), the maximum number of IMF extracted (called number of modes  $N_{\text{modes}}$ ) is related to the maximum number of time bins  $n_{\text{bins}}$  through

$$N_{\text{modes}} = \lfloor \log_2(n_{\text{bins}}/2) \rfloor, \quad (82)$$

where the  $\lfloor x \rfloor$  operator represents the integer part of the real number  $x$ . It is worth to point out that the first modes absorb the statistical fluctuations, while the latest ones contain the low-frequency components of  $R(t)$ . In particular, the last IMF is the total trend of the data-set and could contain relevant information about the change of the background contamination during time. Since the EMD behaves as a dyadic filter, in general a given frequency  $\nu$  is contained between the mode  $i$  and  $i + 1$ :

$$N_{\text{IMF}} < -\log_2(\nu) < N_{\text{IMF}} + 1. \quad (83)$$

The EMD approach shows two main issues: first, the method is strongly dependent on small changes of the initial conditions; second, mode mixtures could occur for a physical component present in the data-set especially when the ratio between signal and background is low (about 0.2, in our case). In order to fight these problems, a white noise can be added to the signal (*dithering*) several times taking the average of all the IMFs extracted. Using a detailed Monte Carlo simulation we tuned the amplitude of the white noise by minimizing the  $\chi^2$  defined as the difference of the amplitudes and the periods extracted from the simulation and the corresponding theoretical values. The best value for the dithering added to the number of events in each bin is 10% of the square root of the bin content. In addition, the simulation fully validated the method since it showed that the procedure is sensitive to the phase and the frequency of the annual modulation when the simulated data-set has the same composition of signal and background as the Borexino real data.

## XXIV.2. Event selection

The two main challenges of this analysis were enlarging the fiducial volume as much as possible to increase the statistical significance of the modulated data and studying the time stability of the background.

As described in Section XI, we defined a FV (see also Fig. 17) obtained including all the events whose stand-off distance from the measured, time-dependent surface of the vessel is  $\geq 0.5$  m. The corresponding volume is changing in time and has a mean value of  $(141.83 \pm 0.55)$  ton, almost twice larger than the one used for the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate measurement (75 ton), see Table VI.

The events were selected using all cuts required for the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  flux measurement with an exception for the  $\alpha$ - $\beta$  cut: this was replaced by a new cut removing all the  $\alpha$ -like events at a cost of a large reduction of  $\beta$  events (less than a half) in the energy window of interest. This cut allows to remove all the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  events whose rate is not stable in time as described in Section XI.3.

The red curve in Fig. 60 represents this new, energy-dependent  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  cut, isolating the  $\alpha$ -contribution towards the positive  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  from the cut. The remaining  $\beta$  events used in the signal  $R(t)$  are those with  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  towards the more negative values. This cut was later taken into account in the Monte Carlo simulations. We selected the energy region  $105 < N_{pe}^d < 380$  for this seasonal modulation analysis. Referring to Fig. 20, we see that in this energy window, after the removal of the  $\alpha$  events of  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$ , the only significant contribution to the background is originated from  ${}^{85}\text{Kr}$  and  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$ . The ratio between all the neutrino-induced signals and background (as obtained with the Monte Carlo) is  $\simeq 1$ . The contri-

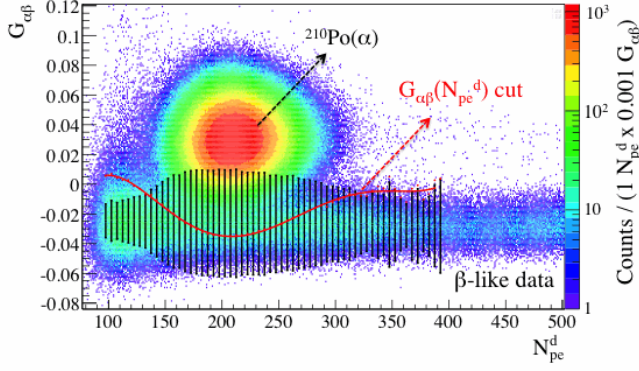


FIG. 60.  $G_{\alpha\beta}$  parameter in the FV used in the seasonal modulation analysis shown as a function of energy ( $N_{pe}^d$  estimator). The red line indicates where the Gatti-cut was placed: in the window of  $(105, 380) N_{pe}^d$ , 66% of  $\beta$ 's survive while almost 100% of  $\alpha$ 's is rejected. Black bars represent, for different energy bins, the  $G_{\beta}$  interval covering 99.9% of  $\beta$ -events.

bution of the  ${}^7\text{Be}$  neutrinos is  $\simeq 70\%$  of the whole solar neutrino-induced signals in this energy window.

### XXIV.3. Background and detector-response stability

We present four major factors that had the most significant impact on the  $R(t)$  in the selected energy window.

- *Change of the  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$  rate.* The observed change of the  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$  has been already discussed in Section XI.3. We have compared the result of Fig. 23 with the one obtained from the spectral fit in six-month long time periods using the FV used for the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  rate analysis. All the spectral components were fixed to their best known values except for  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$  and we have found a confirmation that an exponential function (as shown in Fig. 23) would reasonably well describe the increase of the  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$  contamination. It is important to be able to subtract this trend from the data, because the Lomb-Scargle method misidentifies the trend as an actual significant modulation and returns false results for the  $\nu$ -signal periodicity.
- *Time stability of the energy scale.* In order to verify the stability of the energy scale, we looked at the distribution of  $N_{pe}^d$  obtained from the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}$  peak as a function of time in the FV used in this seasonal analysis. It's clear from Fig. 61 that we can trust the energy scale on a long term to within  $2 N_{pe}^d$  (that is to 1%) which is fully satisfying for our purposes.
- *Time stability of the position reconstruction.* We selected three time periods when the  ${}^{222}\text{Rn}$  rate was temporarily high: 1) the initial detector filling in 2007; 2) the first off-axis calibration campaign in 2009, and

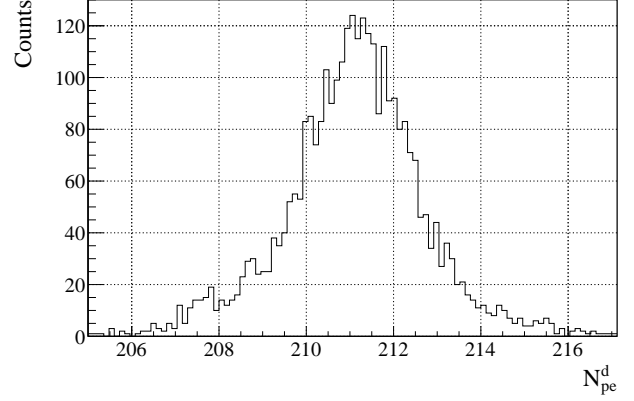


FIG. 61. Energy distribution of the  ${}^{210}\text{Po}(\alpha)$  peak (expressed in  $N_{pe}^d$  estimator) in the FV used for the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  annual modulation analysis.

3) another re-filling in 2010 (needed due to the small leak as explained in Section II.1). Next, we plotted the absolute distance between the reconstructed  ${}^{214}\text{Bi}$  and  ${}^{214}\text{Po}$  events and we normalized the histograms for each period to their total integrals. Results are shown in Fig. 62 where it is clear how well all the three histograms align.

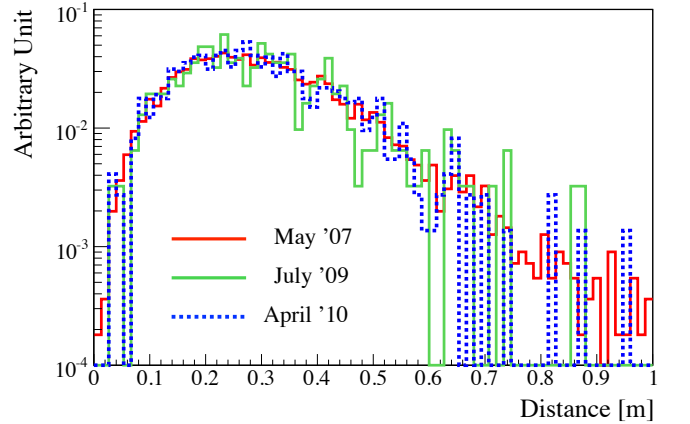


FIG. 62. Absolute distance between  ${}^{214}\text{Bi} - {}^{214}\text{Po}$  fast coincidence events in three periods: May 2007 (solid red), July 2009 (solid green), and April 2010 (dotted blue).

- *${}^{222}\text{Rn}$  contamination.* The active volume has been frequently exposed to effects of external operations. Calibrations and refillings resulted in a temporary increased count rate of  ${}^{222}\text{Rn}$  background. Fortunately though, its short decay time did not pose any long-term danger on the overall purity of the detector. The first six months of data taking have been excluded for this analysis due to an increase of the number of radon events in the upper hemisphere following the detector filling. Note that the choice of the 75.47 ton FV for

the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  rate analysis automatically excludes this region (see Fig. 22) thus allowing to use in that analysis the first six months of data. Summarizing, the seasonal modulation analysis presented here refers to the period from January, 2008 to May, 2010.

#### XXIV.4. Results

We present here the results on the annual modulation of the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate obtained with the three previously described methods. The results are consistent and in agreement with the expectations.

##### Fit of the rate versus time

The selected data are grouped in 60-days long bins and fit with:

$$R(t) = R_0 + R_{\text{Bi}}e^{\Lambda_{\text{Bi}}t} + \bar{R} \left[ 1 + 2\varepsilon \cos \left( \frac{2\pi t}{T} - \phi \right) \right], \quad (84)$$

where  $R_0$  is the background rate not depending on time  $t$  and the exponential term describes the time variation of the  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$  rate as discussed in Section XI.3.7. The third term describes the sinusoidal seasonal modulation, in which  $\bar{R}$  is the mean neutrino interaction rate,  $\varepsilon$  is the eccentricity of the Earth's orbit which defines the amplitude of the sinusoid,  $T$  is the period, and  $\phi$  is the phase. Figure 63 demonstrates that the expected function (84) is in good agreement with the data. We have performed a fit with  $\bar{R}$ ,  $\varepsilon$ , and  $T$  as free parameters, phase  $\phi$  was constrained with a penalty, and the first two terms describing the contribution of non-neutrino background were fixed, based on the study of the time variation of signal in the background-dominated region, see Fig. 23. The eccentricity  $\varepsilon$  and the average neutrino rates  $\bar{R}$  returned by the fit are in agreement to within  $2\sigma$  with the expected ones. The expected period  $T$  of 1 year, and phase  $\phi$  of 0 days, are compatible with our fit results of  $1.01 \pm 0.07$  year and  $11.0 \pm 4.0$  days, respectively.

Figure 64 shows contour plots of the allowed ranges for the eccentricity  $\varepsilon$  and period  $T$  at 1, 2, and  $3\sigma$  C.L. Our best result (yellow star) is within the  $2\sigma$  region of the expected values  $\varepsilon = 0.01671$  and  $T = 1$  year indicated by the yellow triangle.

##### Results with the Lomb-Scargle method

The data selected after the cuts are now grouped into 10-day bins. Such choice of binning was justified with a Monte Carlo simulation where we have checked that the significance of a Lomb-Scargle peak does not change drastically with a bin size varying between 1 – 14 days.

Figure 65 shows the count rate  $R(t)$  in the energy region of 105 – 380  $N_{pe}^d$  (red points (a)) together with the

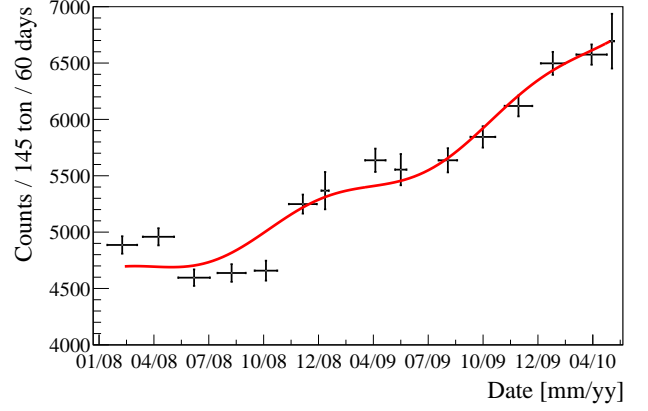


FIG. 63. Results obtained with rate analysis. The continuous line is the curve of Eq. 84. The data are grouped in bins of 60 days.

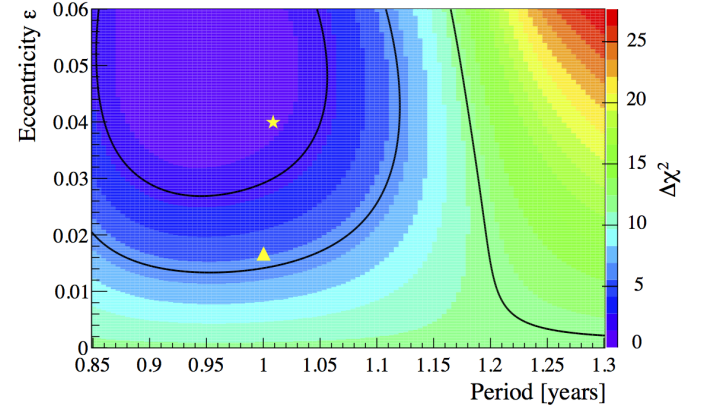


FIG. 64. The results obtained via the fit of the rate-versus-time distribution shown in Fig. 63: a  $\Delta\chi^2$  ( $\Delta\chi_R^2 = \chi_{R_{min}}^2 - \chi_{R_{xy}}^2$ ) map (vertical axis) as a function of eccentricity  $\varepsilon$  and period. The yellow star indicates the best-fit results, while the yellow triangle the expected values. Confidence contours of 1, 2, and  $3\sigma$  are indicated with black solid lines.

background counts from external  $\gamma$ 's (black points (b)). Before performing the frequency analysis on the red data (a), we need to implement a correction which consists in subtracting from these data the exponential trend due to the  ${}^{210}\text{Bi}$  contamination. This trend causes the Lomb-Scargle algorithm to misidentify the annual peak. The resulting Lomb-Scargle periodogram is shown in Fig. 66. Clearly, there is a peak which corresponds to 1 year period. The Spectral Power Density (SPD), that is the value of the periodogram, at the frequency that corresponds to 1 year is 7.961.

The significance of this results and of the Lomb-Scargle analysis is studied with a Monte Carlo simulation with realistic signal-to-background ratio and is shown in Fig. 67. The red filled area shows the SPD(1 year)-distribution of  $10^4$  simulations corresponding to the

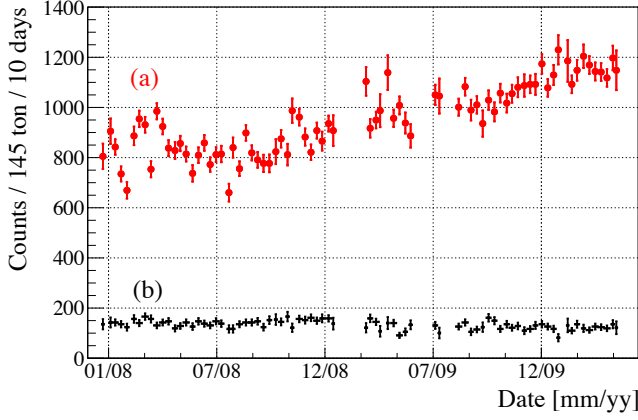


FIG. 65. Rate of events in the energy region  $105 < N_{pe}^d < 380$  and in the FV used in the seasonal modulation analysis as a function of time shown with 10-day binning: the red data points (a) were scaled by a constant factor. For comparison, the black plot (b) shows the count rate due to external  $\gamma$ s which is stable in time since it is not correlated with the changes of the IV shape.

null hypothesis (no seasonal modulation of the neutrino signal) and the black line shows the SPD(1 year)-distribution of another  $10^4$  simulations where the expected seasonal modulation was considered. Indicated with vertical lines are the sensitivity thresholds of  $1\sigma$  (solid),  $2\sigma$  (dashed), and  $3\sigma$  (dotted) C.L. with corresponding detection probabilities of 81.62, 43.54, and 11.68%. Thus, the  $SPD(1\text{ year}) = 7.961$  of our data (see Fig. 65) represents an evidence of the annual-modulation signal with a significance higher than  $3\sigma$ ; our chance of detecting the annual modulation at this level of significance is 11.68%.

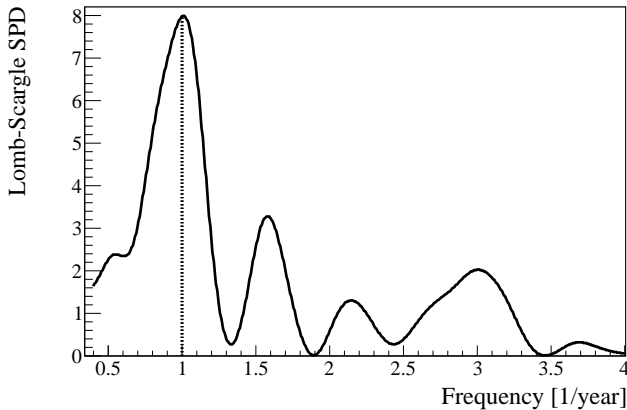


FIG. 66. Lomb-Scargle periodogram for the red data points marked (a) in Fig. 65 after the subtraction of the exponential trend due to the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  contamination. The Spectral Power Density at 1-year is 7.961, as indicated by the vertical line.

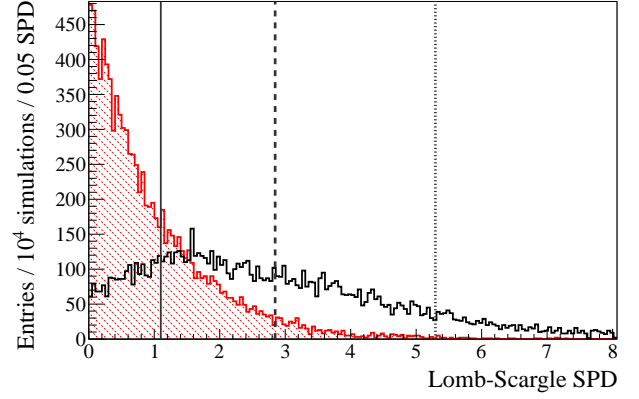


FIG. 67. Distributions of the Lomb-Scargle Spectral Power Density (SPD) at frequency corresponding to 1 year for  $10^4$  simulations of a 7% solar-neutrino annual flux modulation with realistic background (solid black line) and the same number of white-noise simulations of background without any seasonally-modulated signal (red area). Indicated with vertical lines are the sensitivity thresholds of  $1\sigma$  (solid),  $2\sigma$  (dashed), and  $3\sigma$  (dotted) C.L. with corresponding detection probabilities of 81.62, 43.54, and 11.68%, respectively. The detected  $SPD(1\text{ year}) = 7.961$  (see Fig. 66) represents an evidence of the annual-modulation signal with a significance higher than  $3\sigma$ ; our chance of detecting the annual modulation at this level of significance is 11.68%.

## Results with the EMD method

In order to avoid a distorted reconstruction of IMFs due to the empty bins during the data taking, we grouped the selected data in 1-day bins and we filled these empty bins with white noise. In contrast to the Lomb-Scargle method, the subtraction of the exponential trend due to the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  contamination is not needed in application of the EMD method. As a mean value for the white noise we used an average of the count rates from the whole data-set and as the sigma its square-root. We have repeated the procedure 100 times and we have built the distribution of the amplitude, phase, and frequency of the IMF. The final result has been obtained by fitting these distributions. The simulations show that 100 extractions are enough to obtain results not limited by the statistical fluctuations introduced by this procedure.

Figure 68 shows one example of the results of the application of the EMD method and one set of IMF extracted with the described algorithm. The expected annual modulation signal should be contained in the mode number 8. From the simulations done with artificial signals and from literature we found that a single signal can be shared between closest IMFs. Note that the statistical fluctuations can attenuate the signal until it may disappear. This happens in the particular example shown in Fig. 68 in the second year of the data taking. This fact clearly explains why we need to use the technique of the dithering before to decompose the signal with the EMD and

why we cannot perform the decomposition just one time.

In Figure 69 we show in gray all the  $\text{IMF}_8$  ensemble obtained by applying the decomposition 100 times: the solid-black line is the average and the dashed-red line is the expected modulation from the last term of Eq. 84.

A good agreement for the frequency and phase is clearly visible in the trend in the picture, but we found a slightly larger amplitude in the first half of the data-set. Little changes in frequency and phase are also visible in the total trend. These are driven by fast changes in the background behavior (e.g. due to the increasing of the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$ ).

The EMD method does not require an assumption on the time behavior of the IMFs: then the fact that a quasi-sinusoidal trend is clearly visible is a proof that the annual modulation is actually detectable in our data-set.

In Fig. 70 we show the 2D distribution of the results about the eccentricity and period obtained with the 100

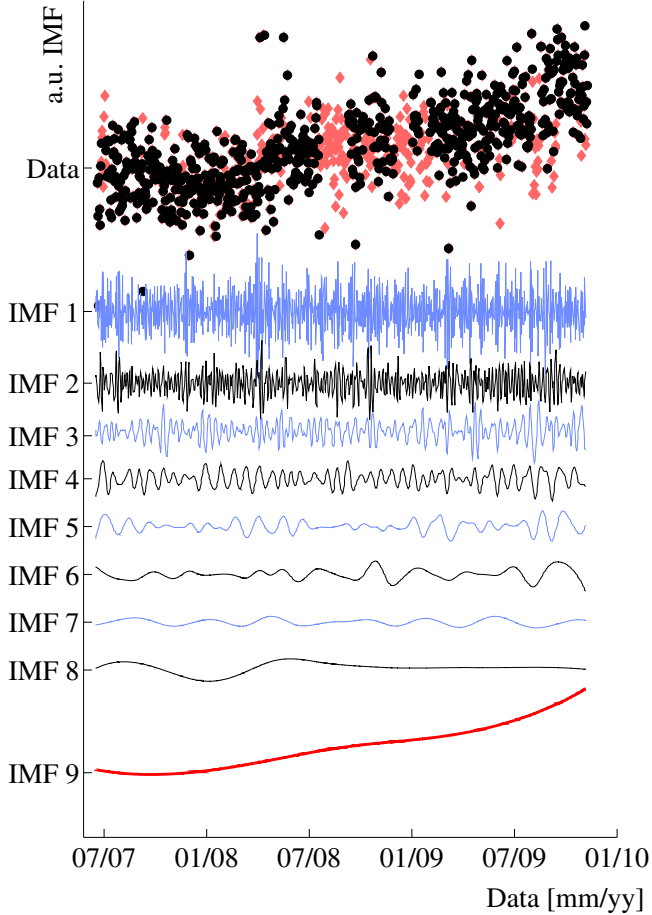


FIG. 68. A sequence of the IMF extracted from the data (black circles) plus white noise (red diamonds) by means of a sifting algorithm using 20 iterations for each one. The  $\text{IMF}_8$  is the one used to extract the results about the seasonal modulation. The last  $\text{IMF}_9$ , also called “trend”, is the best representation of the background variation in time.

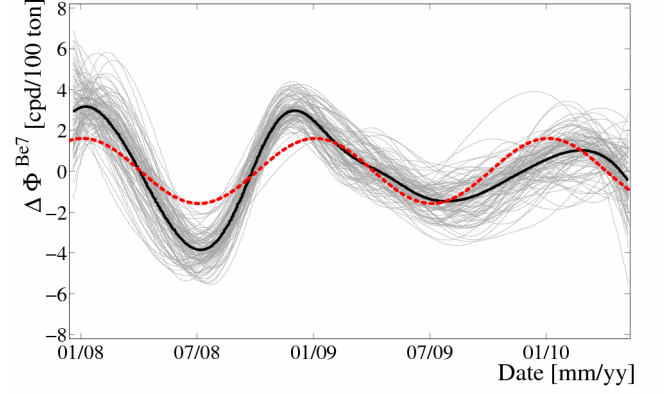


FIG. 69. Set of 100 intrinsic mode functions  $\text{IMF}_8$  extracted after the addition of dithering (grey lines). The black-solid line is their average and the dashed-red line is the annual modulation from Eq. 84. The number of the IMF is the expected one for the annual frequency of  $\nu_{\text{year}} = 0.00274 [d^{-1}]$ .

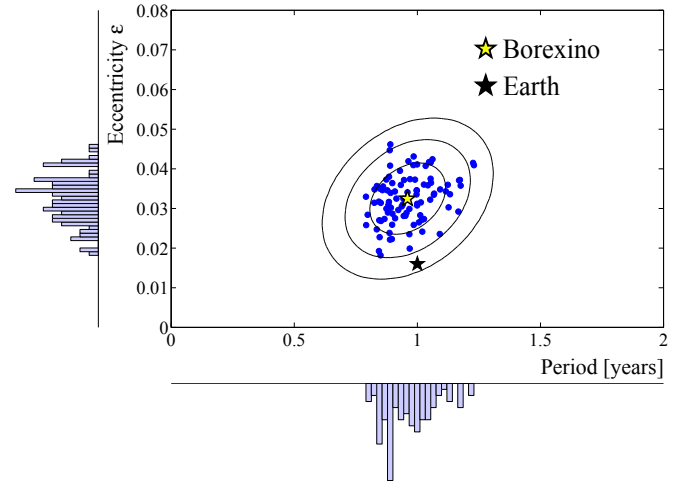


FIG. 70. Blue circles show the eccentricities and periods obtained with the EMD method with 100  $\text{IMF}_8$ 's (see Fig. 69). The projections shown on the vertical and horizontal axis are well described by Gaussian curves. The solid-black line of Fig. 69 is represented by the yellow star in the middle of 1, 2, and 3 $\sigma$  C.L. contours. The black star represents the expectations. The measured period is in perfect agreement with 1 year, while the eccentricity is compatible within 3 $\sigma$ .

$\text{IMF}_8$ 's as well as the corresponding projections on the  $x$  and  $y$  axes. We compare the mean value of the eccentricity and the period obtained from this method (yellow star) with the values expected for the terrestrial orbit (black star). The period agrees with the 1 year value within 1 $\sigma$  and the eccentricity is in agreement with the orbital one within 3 $\sigma$ .



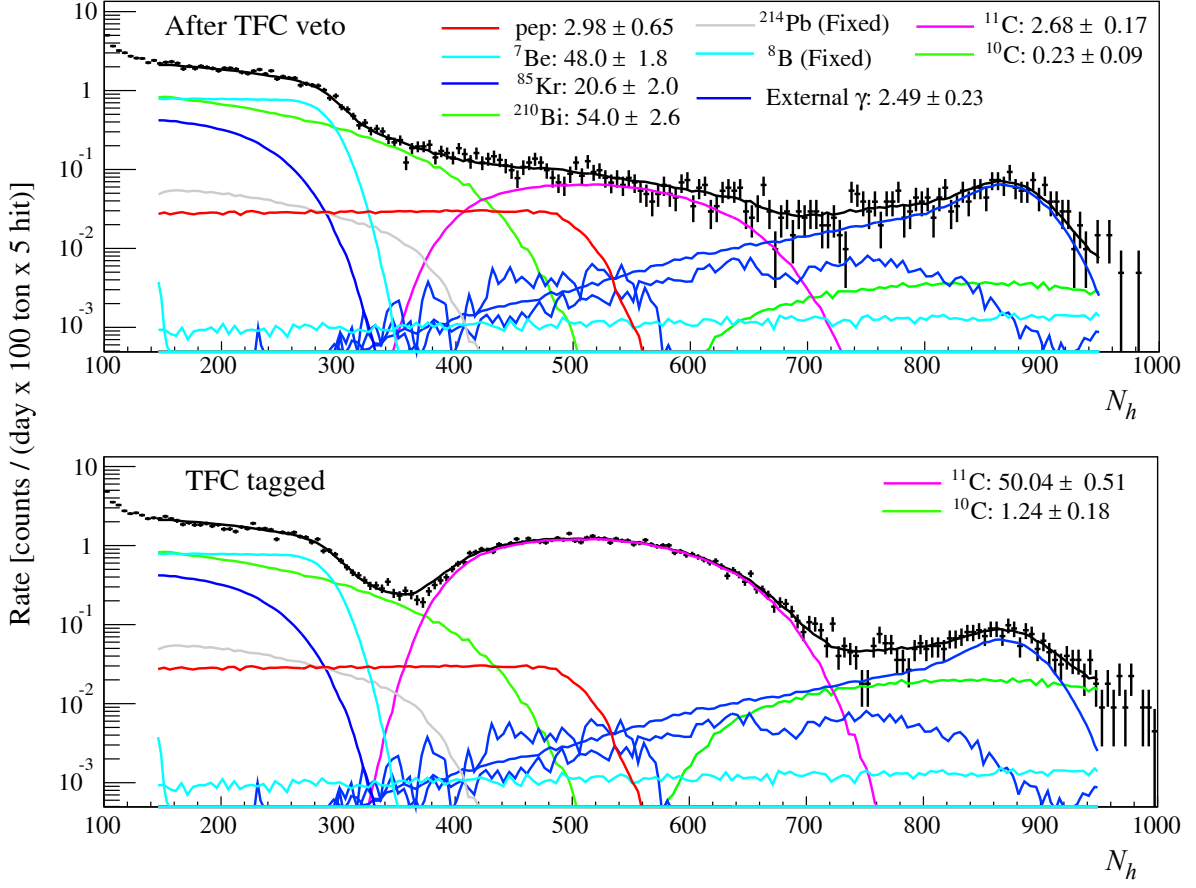


FIG. 71. Energy spectra and the best-fit results performed on the  $N_h$  energy estimator in the *pep* and CNO neutrino analysis. The top panel shows the best fit to the TFC-subtracted spectrum, while the bottom one presents the fit to the complementary, TFC-tagged events. The best-fit values for the rates of the species included in the fit are shown in the legend. Units are cpd/100 ton.

## XXV. THE *pep* AND CNO NEUTRINO INTERACTION RATES

Borexino provided the first measurement of the *pep* solar neutrino interaction rate and the strongest limit to-date on the CNO solar neutrino interaction rate [9]. The measured *pep* interaction rate is:

$$R(\text{pep}) = 3.1 \pm 0.6_{\text{stat}} \pm 0.3_{\text{syst}} \text{ cpd/100 ton}, \quad (85)$$

and the CNO rate is constrained to:

$$R(\text{CNO}) < 7.9 \text{ cpd/100 ton at 95\% C.L.} \quad (86)$$

Regarding the *pep*- $\nu$  interaction rate measurement, the corresponding  $\nu_e$ -equivalent flux is  $(1.00 \pm 0.22) \times 10^8 \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ . Considering the 3-flavor neutrino oscillations, the equivalent flux is  $(1.63 \pm 0.35) \times 10^8 \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ , which can be compared with the expected SSM flux of Table II.

The necessary sensitivity was achieved by adopting novel techniques for the rejection of  $^{11}\text{C}$  cosmogenic background (TFC-veto and BDT parameter described in Section XV) dominating the 1 – 2 MeV energy region. The

event selection criteria are described in Subsection XIII.1 and the FV in Section XI. A multivariate binned maximum likelihood fit procedure (Section XXI) was developed. It is based on the simultaneous fit of the energy spectra, shown in Figs. 71 and 72, and radial and PS-BDT distributions shown in Fig. 73. The TFC-subtracted and complimentary TFC-tagged energy spectra have been fitted simultaneously. For the simultaneous signal extraction, events with  $N_{pe}^d$  150 – 1600 are considered in the energy spectrum. While the energy intervals for the events considered for the fits to the radial and PS-BDT distributions are restricted to 500 – 900 and 450 – 900, respectively. These ranges have been chosen as to include in the fit to those parameter spaces only the species whose distributions are precisely known.

Table XXII summarizes the fit results, the central values with the corresponding statistical and systematic uncertainties, limits, and expected values for the rates of *pep* and CNO neutrinos and for the background components left free in the fit. As seen from this Table, the predictions of standard solar models are consistent with our *pep*- $\nu$  interaction rate measurement. The fit prefers a CNO- $\nu$  interaction rate railed at zero. Therefore, we



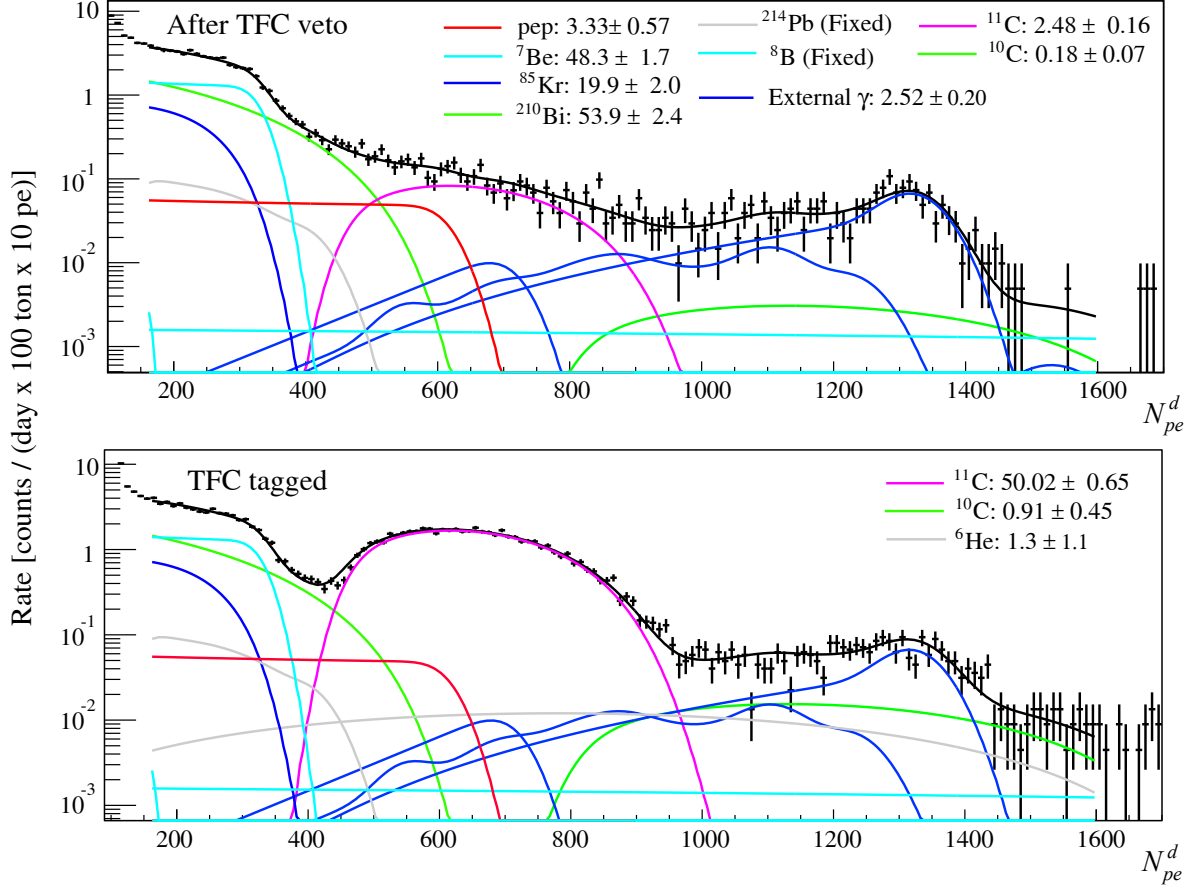


FIG. 72. Energy spectra and the best-fit results performed on the  $N_{pe}^d$  energy estimator in the  $pep$  and CNO neutrino analysis. The top panel shows the best fit to the TFC-subtracted spectrum, while the bottom one presents the fit to the complementary, TFC-tagged events. The best-fit values for the rates of the species included in the fit are shown in the legend. Units are cpd/100 ton.

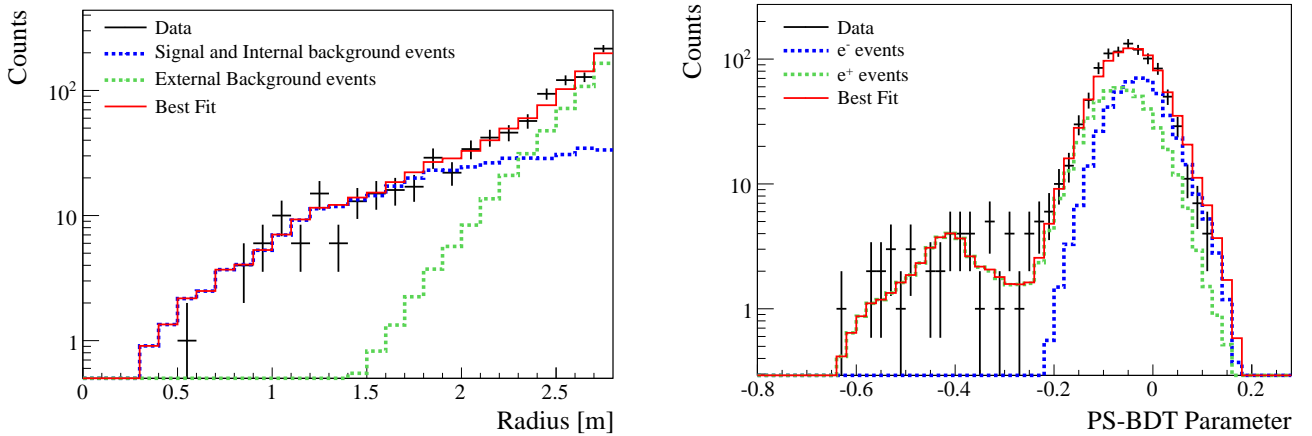


FIG. 73. Left: Radial distribution of events in the energy range  $N_h = 500 - 900$  (black data points) and the best fit (solid-red line) obtained performing the multivariate fit with the  $N_h$  energy estimator. The  $y$ -axis scale is logarithmic. A similar and statistically consistent result is obtained using the variable  $N_{pe}^d$ . Right: Distribution of the PS-BDT parameter for events in the energy range  $450 - 900$   $N_{pe}^d$  (black data points) and the best fit (solid-red line) obtained performing the multivariate fit with the variable  $N_{pe}^d$ . The scale is logarithmic. Similar and consistent results are obtained with  $N_h$  variable.

have performed a likelihood-ratio test to estimate the upper limits also reported in this Table. The ability to measure the CNO- $\nu$  interaction rate mostly depends on the presence of the  $\beta$  background from  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  decays. The  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  spectral shape is very similar to that of the recoil of the electrons scattered by CNO neutrinos. The similarity of the two spectra induces a correlation between the two components in the fit. The  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  count rate in the present data set is more than 10 times higher than what expected from CNO neutrinos. Reducing  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  background as much as possible is the main challenge any experiment willing to measure the CNO neutrinos in liquid scintillators need to tackle. Figure 74 shows this effect for the present data set.

Figure 75 presents the best-fit value for the  $pep$ - $\nu$  interaction rate when the CNO- $\nu$  interaction rate is fixed at different values and shows the  $\Delta\chi^2$  map as a function of both  $pep$  and CNO neutrino interaction rates. The numerical values of this map are given in Table XXIII.

The probability that the data arises from the background-only hypothesis, excluding the signals from  $pep$  and CNO neutrinos, is estimated to be  $3 \times 10^{-7}$ . A comparison of the energy spectrum of the background-only hypothesis with the best-fit result in the  $pep$ -shoulder energy region is given in Fig. 76.

As may be observed in Figs. 71 and 72, the  $^{11}\text{C}$ ,  $^{10}\text{C}$ , and  $^6\text{He}$  rates are much smaller in the spectrum of events after the TFC veto, as expected. Using the fit results we can measure the residual fraction of  $^{11}\text{C}$  background after the TFC veto to be  $0.094 \pm 0.009$ . The measured production rates of cosmogenic isotopes  $^{10}\text{C}$  and  $^6\text{He}$  are also consistent with other Borexino analyses [10], [44] and those obtained by extrapolating KamLAND data [55].

The results obtained on the  $^7\text{Be}$  neutrino interaction rate and the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  activity are consistent with our measurement reported in Section XXII. The rate of the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  obtained (about 35% higher than that reported in the context of the measurement of the  $^7\text{Be}$  neutrino interaction) is due to the different choice of the data set used for the  $pep$  and  $^7\text{Be}$  analysis and to the change of the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  rate with time (see Fig. 23). The 2007 data set, corresponding to the lower  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  rate, is not used for the  $pep$  analysis and this leads to a mean value of  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  rate higher than the one obtained in Section XXII. In addition, in the  $^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  analysis the CNO contribution was fixed to the high-metallicity solar model prediction (possible variations of the CNO- $\nu$  rate were included in the systematic uncertainty, see Section XXII) while it is a free parameter in the  $pep$  analysis: the fit prefers a value of the CNO interaction rate equal to zero so favoring high values of the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  rate.

The fit method, the reliability of the fit results and the interpretation of the likelihood ratio test as a  $\Delta\chi^2$  test have been validated with the use of data-like samples of known input composition obtained with the Monte-Carlo.

The dominant sources of systematic uncertainties for the  $pep$ -neutrino interaction rate are given in Table XXIV with their estimated values. These systematics

increase the upper limit in the CNO neutrino interaction rate by 0.8 cpd/100 ton. The evaluation of the systematic uncertainty due to the energy scale, fit procedures, and live-time prior to the TFC veto has been performed as described for the  $^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  analysis in Section XXII. The contribution of FV-uncertainty has been evaluated with the same method of  $^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  analysis, but using a higher energy range that also includes electron recoils from  $pep$  and CNO-neutrino interactions ( $300 - 1600 N_{pe}^d$ ).

We evaluated, in addition, the contribution of the live-time uncertainty due to the TFC veto. The statistical uncertainty related to the counting method (Section XV.1) used to estimate the relative exposure after the TFC vetoes is  $<0.5\%$  thanks to the large number of events considered ( $^{210}\text{Po}$  or simulated). We include as systematic uncertainty the discrepancy between the two methods described in Section XV which is  $<1\%$ . The overall uncertainty in the exposure introduced by the live-time estimation and the TFC veto is less than 1%.

To test the robustness of the fit against the inclusion of a small fraction of  $\gamma$  rays in both the sample of events used to construct the PDF for electrons and the data to fit, we decreased the energy end point of the PS-BDT fit from  $900 N_{pe}^d$  to  $700 N_{pe}^d$ . As the  $\gamma$ -ray contribution in both cases increases with increasing energy (Fig. 44 and Fig. 72, respectively), this restriction mitigates any possible systematic effect associated with the presence of a small number of  $\gamma$  rays in the electron data. The fit performed with the lower-energy end point of the PS-BDT distributions (PDF and data) returned a central value of the  $pep$  interaction rate increased by 2.7%. This increase has been taken as the systematic uncertainty due to possible  $\gamma$ -rays contamination in the test sample used to build the PS-BDT distributions.

The  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  value returned by the fit is  $2\sigma$  away (lower) from the independent measure obtained with the coincidence analysis. We have included in the study of the systematic uncertainty the variation of the  $pep$ -neutrino interaction rate obtained including in the likelihood a constraint describing the information about the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$ . This contribution is a Gaussian-approximated term:

$$-\ln L_G = \frac{(R - R_0)^2}{2\sigma_0^2}, \quad (87)$$

where  $R$  is the  $^{85}\text{Kr}$  rate in the fit and  $R_0$  and  $\sigma_0$  are the central value and the standard deviation of the independent constraint. As reported in Table XXIV, the  $pep$  central value increases by 3.9%.

The number of events used to train the PS-BDT and to build its PDF is not much larger than the number of fitted events in the energy region of  $^{11}\text{C}$ . Because the former number of events is low, the statistical uncertainty in the PS-BDT PDFs may be not negligible. In order to estimate such uncertainty, we have created 100 more PS-BDT PDFs for  $e^+$  and  $e^-$ ; the bin content of these PDFs has been extracted according to Poisson statistics, using the original PS-BDT PDF bin content as the expected  $\mu$  value. We have performed 100 multivariate fits using these 100 simulated PS-BDT PDFs; the standard deviation

Species	Result [cpd/100 ton]	Expected value [cpd/100 ton]	reference		
<i>pep</i>	$3.1 \pm 0.6 \pm 0.3$	$2.73 \pm 0.05$ ( $2.79 \pm 0.06$ )	Table II		
$^7\text{Be}$	$48.3 \pm 2.0 \pm 0.9$	$46.0 \pm 1.5 \pm 1.6$	Section XXII		
$^{85}\text{Kr}$	$19.3 \pm 2.0 \pm 1.9$	$30.4 \pm 5.3 \pm 1.5$	Table VIII		
$^{210}\text{Bi}$	$54.5 \pm 2.4 \pm 1.4$	NA			
$^{11}\text{C}$	$27.4 \pm 0.3 \pm 0.1$	$28.5 \pm 0.2 \pm 0.7$	Table XIX		
$^{10}\text{C}$	$0.62 \pm 0.2 \pm 0.1$	$0.54 \pm 0.04$	Section XI		
$^6\text{He}$	$0.7(0) \pm 0.6(0.5) \pm 1$	$0.31 \pm 0.04$	Section XI		
Ext. $^{208}\text{Tl}$ ( $N_{pe}^h$ )	$1.64 \pm 0.11 \pm 0.01$	NA	see the caption		
Ext. $^{208}\text{Tl}$ ( $N_h$ )	$1.94 \pm 0.13 \pm 0.02$	NA	see the caption		
Ext. $^{214}\text{Bi}$ ( $N_{pe}^h$ )	$0.67 \pm 0.12 \pm 0.01$	NA	see the caption		
Ext. $^{214}\text{Bi}$ ( $N_h$ )	$0.41 \pm 0.13 \pm 0.02$	NA	see the caption		
Ext. $^{40}\text{K}$	$0.16 \pm 0.1 \pm 0.03$	NA	see the caption		
Total Ext. Bkg.	$2.49 \pm 0.2 \pm 0.04$	NA	see the caption		
	68% Limit	95% Limit	99% Limit	Expected value	reference
CNO	4	12	19	$5.24 \pm 0.54$ ( $3.74 \pm 0.37$ )	Table II
$^{40}\text{K}$	0.11	0.42	0.69	NA	
$^{234\text{m}}\text{Pa}$	0.12	0.46	0.75	$1.78 \pm 0.06$	Section XI

TABLE XXII. Summary of the final *pep*, CNO and background rate results and their corresponding statistical and systematic uncertainties. The statistical uncertainty is the one returned by the fitter. For  $^{210}\text{Bi}$ , the symmetric uncertainty returned by the fitter does not represent well the  $\Delta\chi^2$  profile, as expected from the strong correlation with the CNO interaction rate. For species that fit to zero, the upper confidence limits are obtained from the  $\Delta\chi^2$  profile. Differences between best-fit rates from the  $N_{pe}^d$  and  $N_h$  fits have been included within the systematic uncertainty. Exceptions to this are external  $^{208}\text{Tl}$  and  $^{214}\text{Bi}$ , for which the rates and uncertainties are given separately. Note, that the rates of total external background ( $^{208}\text{Tl} + ^{214}\text{Bi} + ^{40}\text{K}$ ) obtained from the  $N_{pe}^d$  and  $N_h$  fits agree within 1% and this small difference is considered in the systematic error. For the case of  $^6\text{He}$ , its central value is zero in the  $N_h$  fit and the number given in parentheses for the uncertainty is the 68% upper limit, while the corresponding 95% upper limit is 1.5 cpd/100 ton. The last column shows the expected values for the different species based on other sources. The expected rates from backgrounds from the PMTs are taken as lower limits on the total external background. No previous valid estimates for  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  and  $^{40}\text{K}$  are available.

tion of the distribution of the corresponding 100 central values of *pep*- $\nu$  interaction rates, amounting to 5% of the mean value, has been used as an estimate of the systematic uncertainty due to the use of PS-BDT PDFs with limited statistics (listed in Table XXIV as statistical uncertainties in pulse-shape distribution).

The shape of the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$   $\beta$ -decay spectrum was measured using a magnetic spectrometer, where the electron energy  $E$  has an uncertainty  $<0.1\%$  and the statistical uncertainty in the relative intensity is  $<1\%$  for  $E < 960\text{ keV}$  [79]. Figure 77 shows the comparison between this measurement and the spectra obtained using different correction factors as it results in [80] and [81]. In addition, the fit of the magnetic spectrometer data with a function:

$$C(W) = 1 + aW + b/W + cW^2, \quad (88)$$

where  $W = 1 + E/m_e c^2$  is shown. The results agree in relative intensity at 1% level. More recent measurements of the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  spectrum have been performed using Cherenkov and scintillator light detectors [82], [81]. The discrepancy between the  $\beta$  spectrum obtained from the scintillator measurement, also shown in Fig. 77, and the one from the magnetic spectrometer becomes  $>10\%$  for

$E > 900\text{ keV}$  and as large as 30% near the end-point, the region that is most influential in the determination of the neutrino rates. These effects are included in the systematic uncertainty shown in Table XXIV.

## XXVI. NEUTRINO OSCILLATION ANALYSIS WITH THE BOREXINO RESULTS

In this Section we discuss the physical implications of the Borexino results in the context of the neutrino oscillations and of the solar models.

We show the regions of the oscillation parameters  $\Delta m_{21}^2$  and  $\tan^2 \theta_{12}$  determined by the Borexino data alone and by the Borexino data combined with that of the others solar neutrino experiments. Particularly interesting is the fact that the solar neutrino results, once combined, single out the LMA region even without including in the global analysis the results of the KamLAND experiment about reactor antineutrinos. The LMA solution is thus obtained without assuming the validity of CPT symmetry. We also show that, despite the Borexino results have significantly contributed in the determination of the  $^7\text{Be}$ - $\nu$  flux, both the theoretical and ex-

CNO	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9
<i>pep</i>										
0	33.7	31	28.5	26	23.6	21.4	19.2	17.2	15.2	13.5
0.25	29.2	26.7	24.3	22	19.8	17.7	15.7	13.8	12.2	10.7
0.5	25	22.6	20.3	18.2	16.1	14.2	12.5	10.9	9.54	8.37
0.75	21	18.8	16.7	14.7	12.8	11.2	9.7	8.43	7.34	6.44
1	17.2	15.2	13.3	11.5	9.94	8.56	7.38	6.38	5.56	4.93
1.25	13.8	11.9	10.2	8.77	7.48	6.38	5.47	4.74	4.19	3.82
1.5	10.6	9.04	7.65	6.46	5.44	4.62	3.97	3.5	3.21	3.09
1.75	7.9	6.6	5.49	4.56	3.82	3.25	2.87	2.65	2.61	2.74
2	5.6	4.58	3.74	3.07	2.59	2.28	2.15	2.19	2.39	2.76
2.25	3.72	2.96	2.39	1.98	1.76	1.7	1.81	2.09	2.54	3.15
2.5	2.25	1.75	1.43	1.28	1.3	1.49	1.84	2.36	3.04	3.88
2.75	1.17	0.927	0.856	0.953	1.22	1.65	2.24	2.99	3.9	4.96
3	0.478	0.483	0.656	0.994	1.5	2.16	2.98	3.96	5.09	6.37
3.25	0.161	0.409	0.82	1.39	2.13	3.02	4.06	5.26	6.61	8.11
3.5	0.212	0.696	1.34	2.14	3.1	4.22	5.48	6.9	8.46	10.2
3.75	0.621	1.34	2.21	3.24	4.42	5.75	7.23	8.86	10.6	12.6
4	1.38	2.32	3.42	4.66	6.06	7.61	9.3	11.1	13.1	15.2
4.25	2.48	3.64	4.95	6.42	8.02	9.78	11.7	13.7	15.9	18.2
4.5	3.91	5.29	6.82	8.49	10.3	12.3	14.4	16.6	19	21.5
4.75	5.67	7.26	8.99	10.9	12.9	15	17.3	19.8	22.3	25
5	7.75	9.55	11.5	13.6	15.8	18.1	20.6	23.2	26	28.9
5.25	10.1	12.1	14.3	16.5	19	21.5	24.2	27	29.9	33
5.5	12.8	15	17.4	19.8	22.4	25.2	28	31	34.1	37.4
CNO	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19
<i>pep</i>										
0	11.9	10.6	9.42	8.45	7.66	7.06	6.63	6.38	6.31	6.41
0.25	9.44	8.37	7.49	6.78	6.26	5.92	5.75	5.76	5.93	6.28
0.5	7.38	6.58	5.96	5.52	5.26	5.17	5.25	5.51	5.93	6.52
0.75	5.73	5.19	4.83	4.65	4.64	4.8	5.13	5.63	6.29	7.11
1	4.48	4.2	4.1	4.17	4.4	4.81	5.38	6.11	7	8.05
1.25	3.62	3.59	3.74	4.05	4.53	5.17	5.98	6.94	8.06	9.33
1.5	3.14	3.36	3.75	4.31	5.02	5.89	6.93	8.11	9.45	10.9
1.75	3.04	3.5	4.13	4.91	5.86	6.96	8.21	9.62	11.2	12.9
2	3.3	4	4.85	5.87	7.04	8.36	9.83	11.5	13.2	15.1
2.25	3.92	4.84	5.92	7.16	8.55	10.1	11.8	13.6	15.6	17.7
2.5	4.88	6.03	7.33	8.79	10.4	12.1	14	16.1	18.3	20.6
2.75	6.18	7.55	9.07	10.7	12.6	14.5	16.6	18.9	21.2	23.7
3	7.81	9.39	11.1	13	15	17.2	19.5	21.9	24.5	27.2
3.25	9.76	11.6	13.5	15.6	17.8	20.2	22.7	25.3	28.1	31
3.5	12	14	16.2	18.5	20.9	23.4	26.1	28.9	31.9	35
3.75	14.6	16.8	19.1	21.6	24.2	27	29.9	32.9	36	39.3
4	17.5	19.9	22.4	25.1	27.9	30.8	33.9	37.1	40.4	43.8
4.25	20.7	23.3	26	28.8	31.8	34.9	38.2	41.5	45	48.7
4.5	24.1	26.9	29.8	32.9	36	39.3	42.7	46.3	50	53.7

TABLE XXIII.  $\Delta\chi^2$  values obtained from a likelihood-ratio test between the likelihood of the best-fit result and the maximum likelihood returned by the fit when *pep* and CNO neutrino interaction rates are fixed to different values. The rates are expressed in cpd/100 ton. These values have been obtained using  $N_{pe}^d$  energy estimator. A graphical representation of the  $\Delta\chi^2$  map can be found in Fig. 75.

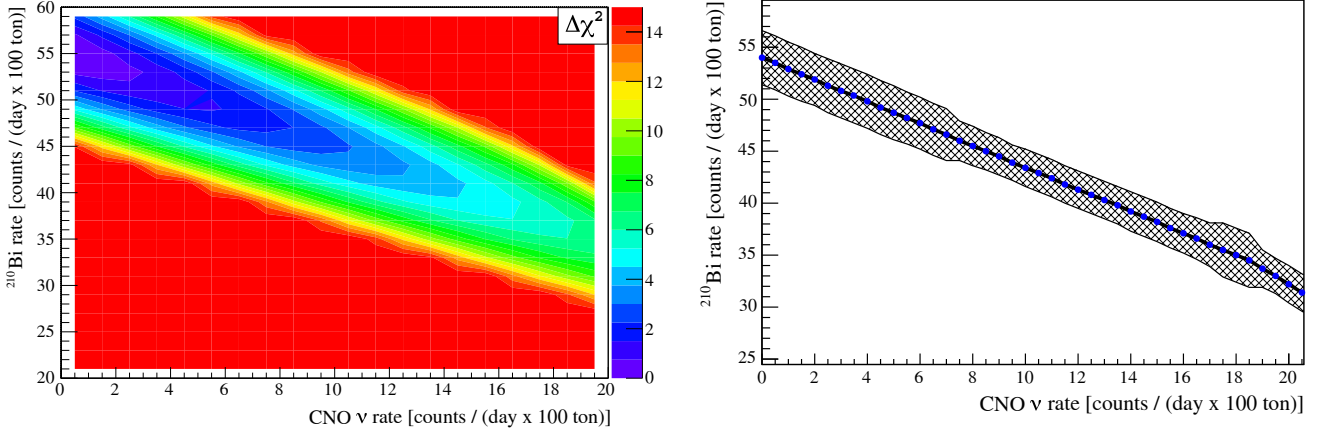


FIG. 74. Correlation between CNO- $\nu$  and  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  rates. Left:  $\Delta\chi^2$  map obtained from a likelihood-ratio test between the likelihood of the best-fit result and the maximum likelihood returned by the fit when the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  and CNO- $\nu$  interaction rates are fixed to different values. The right column gives the colors corresponding to  $\Delta\chi^2$  values; note that the same red color has been used to plot all  $\Delta\chi^2 \geq 14$  values to allow to visualize color variations in the relevant region of the plot. The plot has been obtained using  $N_h$  energy estimator. The  $\text{pep-}\nu$  rate is fixed to the standard solar model prediction. Right:  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  interaction rate returned by the fit for different (fixed) CNO- $\nu$  interaction rates. The shaded area is the statistical uncertainty.

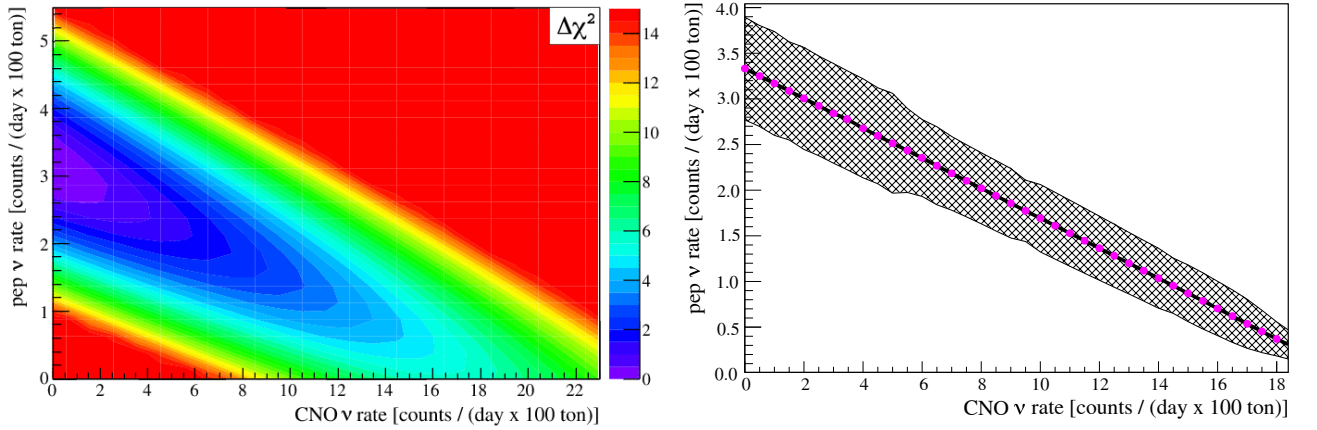


FIG. 75. Correlation between the  $\text{pep}$  and CNO neutrino rates. Left:  $\Delta\chi^2$  map obtained from a likelihood-ratio test between the likelihood of the best-fit result and the maximum likelihood returned by the fit when  $\text{pep}$  and CNO neutrino interaction rates are fixed to different values. The right column gives the colors corresponding to  $\Delta\chi^2$  values; note that the same red color has been used to plot all  $\Delta\chi^2 \geq 14$  values to allow to visualize color variations in the relevant region of the plot. The numerical values of this map are given in Table XXIII. The plot has been obtained using  $N_{pe}^d$  energy estimator; we get similar and consistent numbers using the  $N_h$  variable. Right:  $\text{pep-}\nu$  interaction rate returned by the fit for different (fixed) CNO neutrino interaction rates. The shaded area is the statistical uncertainty.

perimental uncertainties are still too large to distinguish between high- and low-metallicity solar models. Finally, one of the most interesting outcomes of the low-energy solar neutrino measurement of Borexino is the experimental knowledge of the neutrino survival probability as a function of energy: these results are discussed in Section XXVII.

Assuming the standard three-neutrino framework and the energy range of solar neutrinos, it is possible to perform an effective three-flavor analysis by reducing the Hamiltonian which describes the oscillations phenomena to a  $2 \times 2$  matrix, the so-called *effective Hamiltonian*,  $\mathcal{H}_{\text{eff}}$  [83, 84]. This yields the survival probability of an

electron neutrino to be defined as:

$$P_{ee}^{3\nu} = \sin^4 \theta_{13} + \cos^4 \theta_{13} P_{ee}^{2\nu}, \quad (89)$$

where  $P_{ee}^{2\nu} = |\langle \nu_e | \mathcal{H}_{\text{eff}} | \nu_e \rangle|^2$ .

In the two-neutrino mixing case, the survival probability for a solar electron neutrino of given energy can be written as [85]:

$$P_{ee}^{2\nu} = P^S (1 - P^E) + (1 - P^S) P^E + 2 \cos \xi \sqrt{P^S (1 - P^E) (1 - P^S) P^E}, \quad (90)$$

where  $P^S$  is the probability that a  $\nu_e$  produced in the Sun becomes a neutrino mass eigenstate  $\nu_1$ ,  $P^E$  is the

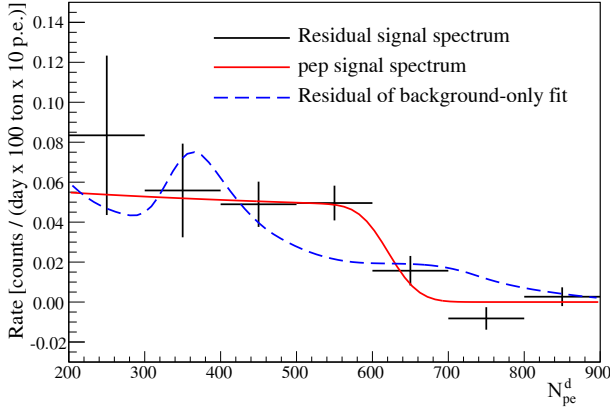


FIG. 76. Residuals after the best-fit values of all species except the signal from *pep* and CNO solar neutrinos are subtracted from the data energy spectrum (black data points). The  $e^-$  recoil spectrum due to  $pep-\nu$  is shown in solid-red line. A second fit has been performed excluding the *pep* and CNO signals. The dashed blue line gives the resulting best-fit spectrum, after the subtraction of the best estimates for the backgrounds, as obtained from the fit used for the signal extraction. The two isotopes showing a significant difference in the output of the background only fit and in the one with the solar neutrinos are  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  and  $^{234m}\text{Pa}$ .

Source	Uncertainty (%)
Fiducial exposure	+0.6 -1.1
Energy response	$\pm 4.1$
$^{210}\text{Bi}$ spectral shape	+1.0 -5.0
Fit methods	$\pm 5.7$
Inclusion of independent $^{85}\text{Kr}$ estimate	+3.9 -0
$\gamma$ rays in pulse-shape distribution	$\pm 2.7$
Stat. unc. in pulse-shape distributions	$\pm 5$
Total systematic uncertainty	$\pm 10.0$

TABLE XXIV. Systematic uncertainties of the  $pep-\nu$  interaction rate. These systematics increase the upper limit in the CNO-neutrino interaction rate by 0.8 cpd/100 ton.

probability that a neutrino propagating in vacuum as mass eigenstate  $\nu_2$  is detected on Earth as a  $\nu_e$ , and the factor  $\xi$  is defined as:

$$\xi = \frac{\Delta m_{12}^2}{2E}(L - r), \quad (91)$$

where  $L$  is the average distance between the center of the Sun and the surface of the Earth and  $r$  is the distance between the neutrino production point and the center of the Sun.

The survival probability is computed by dealing separately  $P^S$  and  $P^E$ : these two quantities are calculated for each set of parameters  $\Delta m_{21}^2/4E$ ,  $\tan^2 \theta_{12}$ ,  $\sin^2 \theta_{13}$ , according to the indications of the standard solar model [2]. The propagation of neutrinos inside the Earth has been

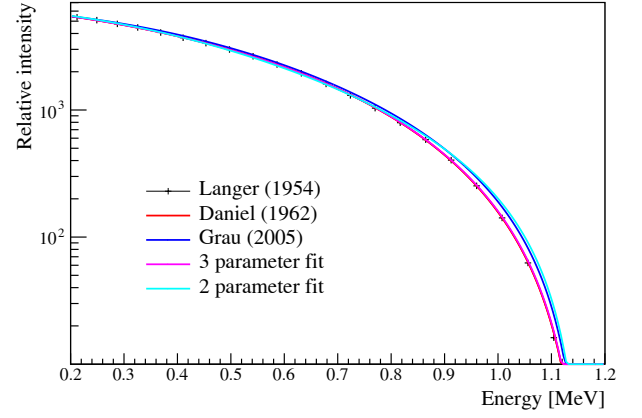


FIG. 77. Comparison between the  $^{210}\text{Bi}$  energy spectrum measured using the magnetic spectrometer [79] (crosses, labeled as Langer (1954)) with spectra obtained using different correction factors: those calculated in [80] (red curve labeled as Daniel (1962)) and in [81] (blue curve labeled as Grau (2005)). Also shown are the fit to the Langer data according to Eq.88 with all the three parameters and with  $b=0$ .

evaluated by selecting shells with uniform density according to the Earth model described in [86].

For all experiments except Borexino we use the ideal zenith exposure. In the Borexino case, it was possible to use the experimental exposure function weighted by the real live-time.

The parameter estimation is obtained by finding the minimum of the  $\chi^2$  function and by tracing the iso- $\Delta\chi^2$  contours around it.

If  $R_{\text{EXP}}^{i,A}$  is the set of results of the measurement  $i$  actually obtained by the  $A$  experiment, and  $R_{\text{THEO}}^{i,A}(\Delta m_{21}^2, \tan^2 \theta_{12}, \sin^2 \theta_{13}, \Phi_{\nu,A})$  is the corresponding set of theoretical predictions, then the  $\chi^2$  of the  $A$  experiment is defined as:

$$\chi_A^2 = \left[ R_{\text{EXP}}^{i,A} - R_{\text{THEO}}^{i,A}(\Delta m_{21}^2, \theta_{12}, \theta_{13}, \Phi_{\nu,A}) \right] \sigma_{ij}^{-2} \left[ R_{\text{EXP}}^{j,A} - R_{\text{THEO}}^{j,A}(\Delta m_{21}^2, \theta_{12}, \theta_{13}, \Phi_{\nu,A}) \right] \quad (92)$$

The error matrix  $\sigma_{ij}$  includes both the theoretical and experimental uncertainties as well as the cross-correlations between errors on the different parameters.

The  $\chi^2$ -projections for each parameter of the fit are then obtained by marginalizing over  $\Delta m_{21}^2$ ,  $\tan^2 \theta_{12}$ , and  $\sin^2 \theta_{13}$ . Unless otherwise stated, the uncertainties we quote correspond to  $1\sigma$ .

## XXVI.1. Analysis of the Borexino data

In this section we report the results on the neutrino oscillation parameters obtained considering the Borexino data alone. We assume the high-metallicity SSM.

The theoretical correlation factor between  $^7\text{Be}$  and  $^8\text{B}$  neutrino fluxes is taken from [87]. After computing the



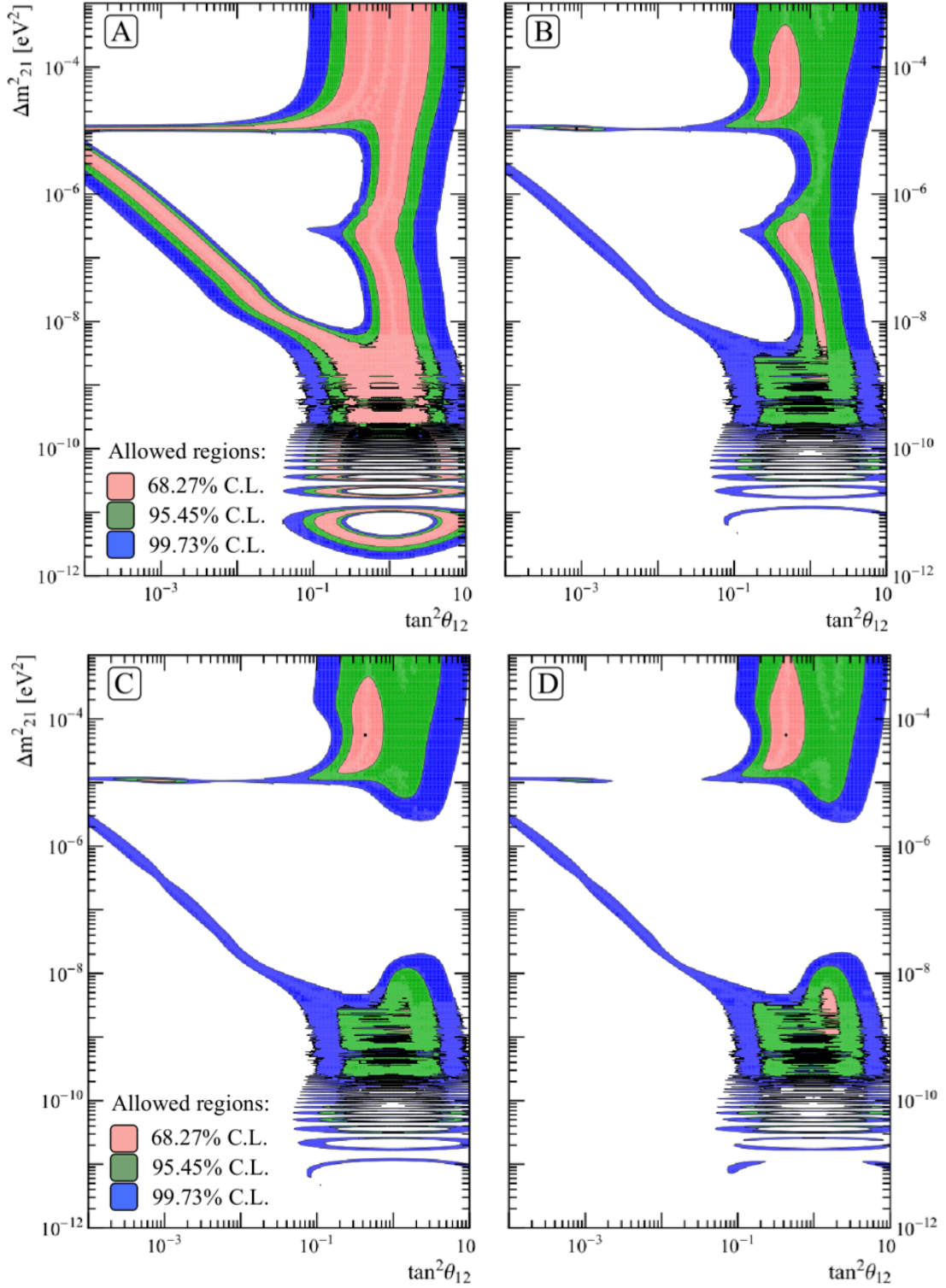


FIG. 78. The Borexino data analysis in the  $\tan^2 \theta_{12} - \Delta m_{21}^2$  space. Allowed regions (NDF = 2) at 68.27% C.L. (pink), 95.45% C.L. (green), and 99.73% C.L. (blue). Panel A: impact of the Borexino  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  rate measurement. Panel B: the combined analysis of Borexino measurements of  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  and  ${}^8\text{B}-\nu$  rates. Panel C: the impact of  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  and  ${}^8\text{B}-\nu$  rates together with the  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  day-night asymmetry results. Panel D: the global impact of all the Borexino measurements to date, including the  $\text{pep}-\nu$  rate.

survival probabilities  $P^S$  and  $P^E$ , the expected rates are evaluated taking into account the cross sections of the processes convolved with the detector resolution at the

particular investigated energies.

The panels in Fig. 78 show the effects of the analysis of the Borexino  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  interaction rate as in [7] (panel

A), and the combination of  ${}^7\text{Be}$  plus  ${}^8\text{B}$  ( $T > 3000$  keV) neutrino rates and  ${}^8\text{B}$  spectral shape as in [10] (panel B), plus the measurement of a null  ${}^7\text{Be}-\nu$  day-night asymmetry as in [8] (panel C), plus the  $pep-\nu$  total count rate of [9] (panel D). Although Borexino, like all other solar neutrino experiments, does not have significant sensitivity to  $\theta_{13}$ , we directly report the results obtained by assuming  $\sin^2 \theta_{13} = 0.0241$  [16].

Figure 79 shows a clear output of this study, the rejection of the LOW solution ( $10^{-8} \text{ eV}^2 < \Delta m_{21}^2 < 10^{-6} \text{ eV}^2$ ) in the MSW scenario: the Borexino experiment alone is able to rule out the LOW mass regime at more than  $8.5\sigma$ .

### XXVI.2. Combined analysis of solar neutrino experiments results

In this section we present (as before, in the framework of the high-metallicity standard solar model) the results on the oscillation parameters obtained by a combined analysis of all the solar neutrino experiments with and without Borexino. We do not include here the results on reactor antineutrinos obtained with the KamLAND experiment. We first analyzed the impact of the results excluding Borexino and including the data from the Homestake [88], GALLEX/GNO-[3], SAGE [4], SNO [89, 90], and Super-Kamiokande [91, 92].

The left panel of Fig. 80 shows the resulting allowed regions for the oscillation parameters. In this case, the best-fit point ( $\Delta m_{21}^2 = 5.4^{+1.7}_{-1.1} \times 10^{-5} \text{ eV}^2$ ,  $\tan^2 \theta_{12} = 0.479^{+0.035}_{-0.042}$ ,  $\sin^2 \theta_{13} < 0.029$ ) belongs to the LMA region but a small portion of LOW region is still allowed at  $\Delta\chi^2 = 11.83$ . The right panel of Fig. 80 shows the same allowed regions once the Borexino data are included. The best fit ( $\Delta m_{21}^2 = 5.4^{+1.7}_{-1.1} \times 10^{-5} \text{ eV}^2$ ,  $\tan^2 \theta_{12} = 0.468^{+0.031}_{-0.044}$ ,  $\sin^2 \theta_{13} < 0.030$ ) is slightly modified while the LOW region is strongly excluded at  $\Delta\chi^2 > 190$ . Therefore, after the inclusion of the Borexino data, solar neutrino data alone can single out the LMA solution with very high confidence (Fig. 81), without using the Kamland antineutrinos data and thus without relying on CPT symmetry.

### XXVI.3. Combined analysis of solar plus KamLAND experimental results

The KamLAND contribution in the neutrino oscillation scenario is taken into account according to [93] where a parametric expression of the survival probability, as well as the observed values with the relative uncertainties, are reported.

Assuming the CPT invariance, the analysis of the KamLAND measurements singles out the LMA oscillation solution at more than 99.73% C.L. The best fit obtained after marginalizing over the three oscillation parameters is  $\Delta m_{21}^2 = 7.50^{+0.19}_{-0.20} \times 10^{-5} \text{ eV}^2$ ,  $\tan^2 \theta_{12} = 0.437^{+0.073}_{-0.060}$ , and  $\sin^2 \theta_{13} < 0.034$ .

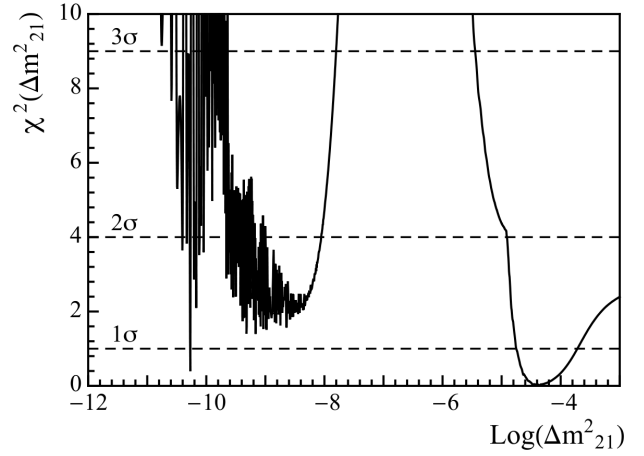


FIG. 79. The  $\chi^2$ -profile of the  $\Delta m_{21}^2$  parameter in the Borexino results analysis. The dashed lines indicate the  $1\sigma$  [ $\chi^2(\Delta m_{21}^2) = 1$ ],  $2\sigma$  [ $\chi^2(\Delta m_{21}^2) = 4$ ], and  $3\sigma$  [ $\chi^2(\Delta m_{21}^2) = 9$ ] levels. The MSW-LOW region ( $10^{-8} \text{ eV}^2 < \Delta m_{21}^2 < 10^{-6} \text{ eV}^2$ ) is ruled out at more than  $8.5\sigma$ .

After having analyzed both the solar and KamLAND experiments, the next logical step is a combined analysis of the solar plus KamLAND data. Since there are no correlations between those sets of data, this study is accomplished by directly summing the two  $\chi^2$ -outcomes and it results with the best-fit point still belonging to the LMA regime:  $\Delta m_{21}^2 = 7.50^{+0.18}_{-0.21} \times 10^{-5} \text{ eV}^2$ ,  $\tan^2 \theta_{12} = 0.457^{+0.038}_{-0.025}$ ,  $\sin^2 \theta_{13} = 0.023^{+0.014}_{-0.018}$ .

### XXVI.4. The solar metallicity controversy

The analysis so far described were performed under the assumption that the expected neutrino fluxes, including

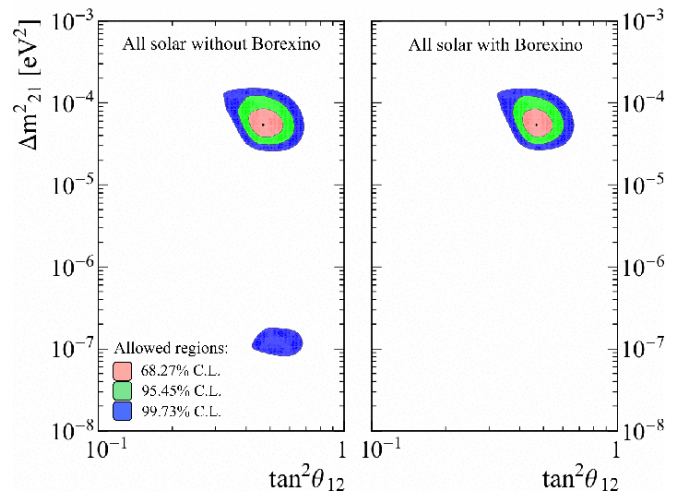


FIG. 80. Allowed regions (NDF = 3) of the space of parameters at 68.27% C.L. (pink), 95.45% C.L. (green), and 99.73% C.L. (blue) by the solar-without Borexino (left panel) and solar-with Borexino (right panel) data set.

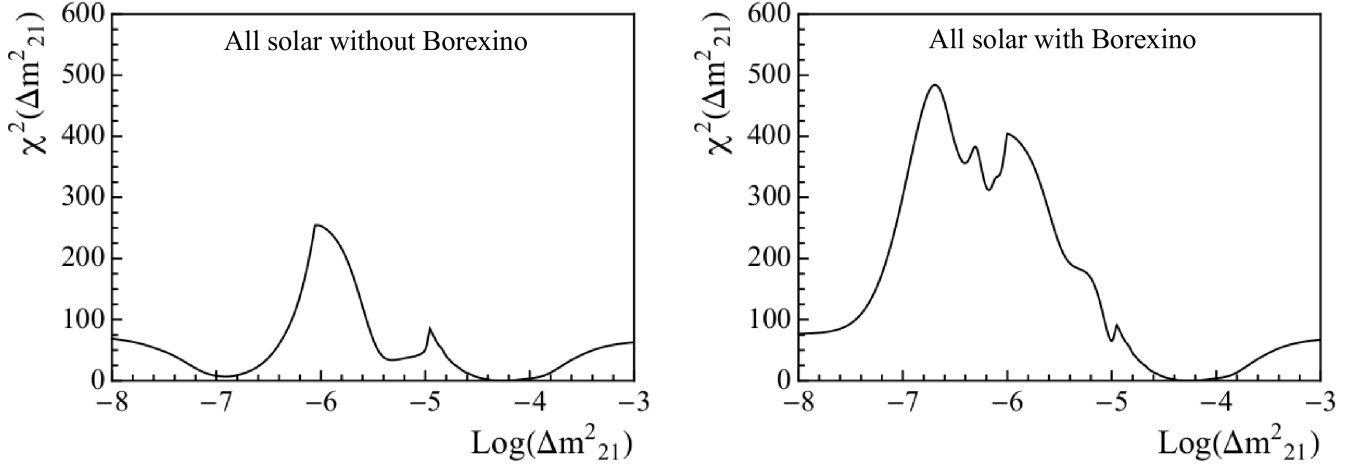


FIG. 81. Comparison of the  $\chi^2$ -profile for  $\Delta m^2_{21}$  obtained by the analysis of all available solar data without (left) and with (right) the Borexino contribution, after marginalization over  $\tan^2 \theta_{12}$  and  $\sin^2 \theta_{13}$ .

their estimated (and correlated) uncertainties, are predicted by the high-metallicity hypothesis of the standard solar model.

The best way to approach the study of the SSM parameters and to look deeper into the low/high-metallicity controversy is to analyze the data leaving the neutrino fluxes as free parameters of the fit. We define the reduced fluxes (or astrophysical factors)  $f_{\text{Be}}$  and  $f_{\text{B}}$  where  $f_i$  is the ratio of the true flux to the flux  $\Phi_{\text{SSM}}^{\text{HIGH}}$  predicted by the high-metallicity standard solar model. Thus, in the beryllium and boron case, the reduced fluxes are:

$$f_{\text{Be}} = \frac{\Phi(^7\text{Be})}{\Phi(^7\text{Be})_{\text{SSM}}^{\text{HIGH}}} \quad \text{and} \quad f_{\text{B}} = \frac{\Phi(^8\text{B})}{\Phi(^8\text{B})_{\text{SSM}}^{\text{HIGH}}}. \quad (93)$$

By construction, the theoretical beryllium and boron reduced fluxes in the high-metallicity hypothesis result  $f_{\text{Be}} = 1.00 \pm 0.07$  and  $f_{\text{B}} = 1.00 \pm 0.14$ . Instead, in the case of low-metallicity hypothesis, the expected fluxes are  $f_{\text{Be}} = 0.91 \pm 0.06$  and  $f_{\text{B}} = 0.82 \pm 0.11$ .

Conservation of energy during the solar fusion is implemented by imposing the luminosity constraint [94, 95].

If the global fit is performed on the solar-without Borexino plus KamLAND data set, the constraint on beryllium is very weak and the best values for  $f_{\text{Be}}$  and  $f_{\text{B}}$  are found to be  $f_{\text{Be}} = 0.76^{+0.22}_{-0.21}$  and  $f_{\text{B}} = 0.90^{+0.02}_{-0.02}$ . This is due to the fact that  $^7\text{Be}$  flux is very poorly constrained by any solar experiment other than Borexino.

Once the Borexino current measurements are included, the situation significantly improves and the best fit are  $f_{\text{Be}} = 0.95^{+0.05}_{-0.04}$ , and  $f_{\text{B}} = 0.90^{+0.02}_{-0.02}$  corresponding to the neutrino fluxes  $\Phi_{\text{Be}} = (4.75^{+0.26}_{-0.22}) \times 10^9 \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ , and  $\Phi_{\text{B}} = (5.02^{+0.17}_{-0.19}) \times 10^6 \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$  respectively.

For  $f_{\text{B}}$ , the best fit value obtained with the two data sets does not change significantly since the  $^8\text{B}$  flux is mainly determined by the results of the SNO and Super-Kamiokande experiments.

The best fit for the oscillation parameters are found to be  $\Delta m^2_{21} = 7.50^{+0.17}_{-0.23} \times 10^{-5} \text{ eV}^2$ , and  $\tan^2 \theta_{12} =$

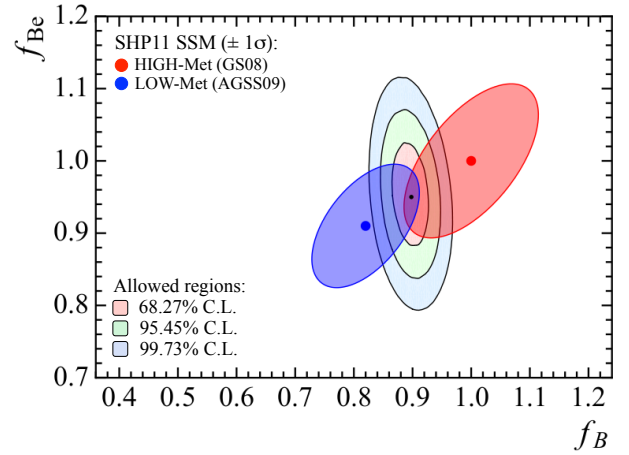


FIG. 82. The  $1\sigma$  theoretical range of high (red) and low (blue) metallicity Standard Solar Model for  $f_{\text{Be}}$  and  $f_{\text{B}}$ , compared to the  $1\sigma$  (light pink),  $2\sigma$  (light green), and  $3\sigma$  (light blue) allowed regions by the global analysis of solar-with Borexino plus KamLAND results. The theoretical correlation factors are taken from [87].

$0.452^{+0.029}_{-0.034}$ , fully compatible with those obtained by fixing all the fluxes to the standard solar model predictions (Section XXVI.3). In this specific analysis,  $\theta_{13}$  is assumed equal to 0.

It is interesting to compare the result of the global analysis on solar-with Borexino plus KamLAND results, with the theoretical expectations for  $f_{\text{Be}}$  and  $f_{\text{B}}$ . From Fig. 82 it is clear that the actual neutrino data cannot discriminate between the low/high-metallicity hypotheses in the solar model: both the  $1\sigma$  theoretical range of low/high-metallicity models lies in the  $3\sigma$  allowed region by the current solar plus KamLAND data.

At present, no experimental results help to disentangle between the two metallicity scenarios: the theoretical uncertainty on  $^7\text{Be}$  and  $^8\text{B}$  neutrinos is of the order of their experimental precision. An improvement in the de-

termination of the different solar parameters is needed.

## XXVII. THE NEUTRINO SURVIVAL PROBABILITY

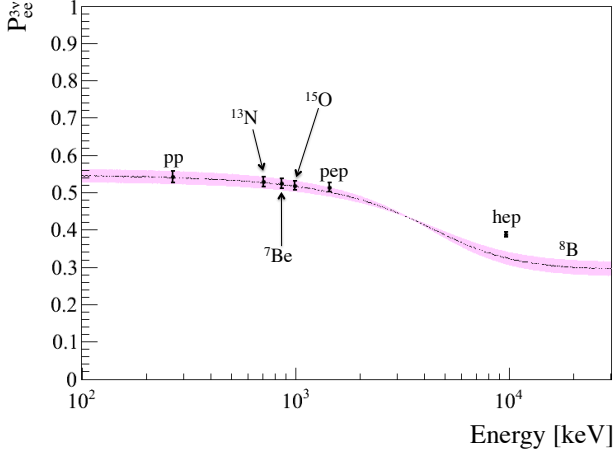


FIG. 83. Electron neutrino survival probability as a function of neutrino energy according to MSW–LMA model, see Eq. 94. The pink band is for  $^8\text{B}$  solar neutrinos, considering their production region in the Sun. The other points represent other solar neutrino fluxes, considering their proper production regions, and reported for mono-energetic  $^7\text{Be}$  (862 keV) and  $pep$  (1444 keV) neutrinos and for the mean energies of fluxes with continuous energy spectrum:  $pp$  (267 keV),  $^{13}\text{N}$  (707 keV),  $^{15}\text{O}$  (997 keV), and  $hep$  (9625 keV).

Solar neutrino oscillations are characterized by the survival probability  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}$  (defined in Section XXVI with the relation 89) of electron neutrinos produced in the Sun reaching the detector on Earth.  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}$  depends on the oscillation parameters and on the neutrino energy. In the MSW–LMA model it shows specific features related to the matter effects taking place while the neutrinos travel inside the Sun (MSW). These effects influence the propagation of  $\nu_e$  and  $\nu_x$  differently, as the scattering probability of  $\nu_e$  off electrons is larger than that of  $\nu_x$  due to CC interactions. The effective Hamiltonian depends on the electron density  $n_e$  in the Sun and, considering the case in which the propagation of neutrinos in the Sun satisfies proper hypothesis of adiabaticity, the resulting survival probability (formula 89) does not depend on details of the Sun density profile and is well approximated by the following simple form [97]:

$$P_{ee}^{3\nu} = \frac{1}{2} \cos^4 \theta_{13} (1 + \cos 2\theta_{12}^M \cos 2\theta_{12}), \quad (94)$$

where  $\theta_{12}^M$  is called mixing angle in matter

$$\cos 2\theta_{12}^M = \frac{\cos 2\theta_{12} - \beta}{\sqrt{(\cos 2\theta_{12} - \beta)^2 + \sin^2 2\theta_{12}}}, \quad (95)$$

with

$$\beta = \frac{2\sqrt{2}G_F \cos^2 \theta_{13} n_e E_\nu}{\Delta m_{12}^2}, \quad (96)$$

where  $G_F$  is the Fermi coupling constant,  $n_e$  is the electron density in the Sun calculated at the neutrino production point, and  $E_\nu$  is the neutrino energy.

Neutrinos from different reactions are produced in the Sun at different radii [98] and the electron density in the Sun decreases with increasing radius. This means that  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}$  for a given neutrino energy is expected to depend on the neutrino species under consideration. Figure 83 shows  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}$  calculated according to the MSW–LMA. The band refers to the  $^8\text{B}$  neutrinos and was obtained averaging the value of  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}$  for each energy calculated for different radii (that is different  $n_e$ ) in the Sun according to the proper radial distribution of the production point of the  $^8\text{B}$ - $\nu$ 's. The width of the curve is due to the uncertainties ( $1\sigma$ ) associated with the mixing angles and  $\Delta m_{12}^2$ . The plot also shows the value of the  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}$  calculated for the mono-energetic  $^7\text{Be}$  and  $pep$  neutrinos, considering their proper production regions in the Sun. Similarly, points at mean energies of  $pp$ , CNO, and  $hep$  neutrino fluxes (having continuous energy spectra) are also included. From this figure we see that the dependence of the survival probability from the neutrino production region in the Sun is small and it is masked by current uncertainties. The curve calculated for the  $^8\text{B}$  neutrinos matches well the prediction of the MSW–LMA model for  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}$  versus energy.

The relative importance of the MSW matter term and the kinematic vacuum oscillation is described by the quantity  $\beta(E_\nu)$ , defined in Eq. 96. For  $\beta < \cos 2\theta_{12} \simeq 0.4$ , the survival probability reaches the value corresponding to vacuum-averaged oscillations ( $\sim 0.55$ ), while for  $\beta > 1$ , it corresponds to matter-dominated oscillations ( $\sim 0.30$ ). The  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}$  in the MSW–LMA model exhibits a strong energy dependence only in the region around 2 MeV, where  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}$  is characterized by a transition between the values corresponding to these two limiting regimes, see Fig. 83. The measurement of the low-energy solar neutrinos spectrum with Borexino offers the perfect frame to test this prediction of the MSW–LMA oscillation model. Different oscillation models, including the possibility that neutrinos undergo non standard interactions, predict survival probabilities with a significantly different energy dependence [18].

The value of  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}$  for the mono-energetic  $^7\text{Be}$  neutrinos is obtained from the Borexino measurement of the interaction rate  $R(^7\text{Be})$  using the relation

$$R(^7\text{Be}) = \Phi(^7\text{Be}) (P_{ee}^{3\nu} \sigma_{\nu e} + (1 - P_{ee}^{3\nu}) \sigma_{\nu x}) N_{e-}, \quad (97)$$

where  $N_{e-}$  is the number of target electrons (reported in Table VI) and  $\Phi(^7\text{Be})$  is the flux of neutrinos produced in the Sun, listed in Table II.  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}$  for  $pep$  neutrinos is obtained in the same way.

Using the fluxes of the high-metallicity solar model GS98 [2], we get  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}(E_\nu = 862 \text{ keV}) = 0.51 \pm 0.07$



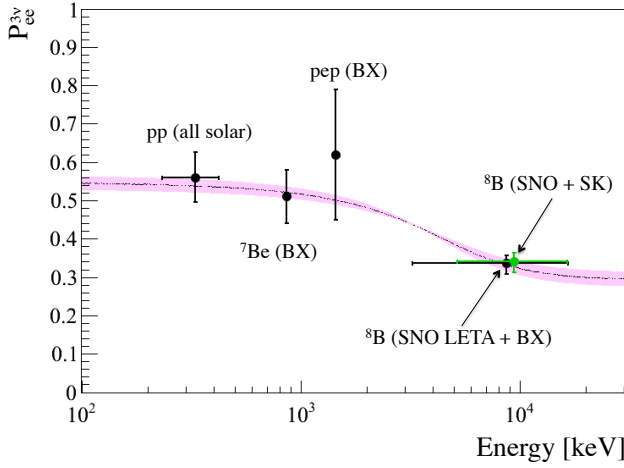


FIG. 84. Electron neutrino survival probability as a function of neutrino energy according to MSW-LMA model. The band is the same as in Fig. 83, calculated for the production region of  $^8\text{B}$  solar neutrinos which represents well also other species of solar neutrinos. The points represent the solar neutrino experimental data for  $^7\text{Be}$  and  $pep$  mono-energetic neutrinos (Borexino data), for  $^8\text{B}$  neutrinos detected above 5000 keV of scattered-electron energy  $T$  (SNO and Super-Kamiokande data) and for  $T > 3000$  keV (SNO LETA + Borexino data), and for  $pp$  neutrinos considering all solar neutrino data, including radiochemical experiments.

including both the experimental and theoretical (solar model) uncertainties and  $P_{ee}^{3\nu}(E_\nu = 1440 \text{ keV}) = 0.62 \pm 0.17$ . A combined analysis of the Borexino data together with those of other solar experiments allows to obtain also the values of survival probability for the  $pp$  and  $^8\text{B}$  neutrinos. Figure 84 reports the results.

## XXVIII. CONCLUSIONS AND PERSPECTIVES

The rich scientific harvest of the Borexino Phase-I was made possible by the extreme radio-purity of the detector and of its liquid scintillator core in particular. Challenging design purity levels have been mostly met, and,

in some cases, surpassed by a few orders of magnitude.

The central physics goal was achieved with the 5% measurement of the  $^7\text{Be}$  solar neutrino rate. Three more measurements beyond the scope of the original proposal were made as well: the first observation of the solar  $pep$  neutrinos, the most stringent experimental constraint on the flux of CNO neutrinos, and the low-threshold measurement of the  $^8\text{B}$  solar neutrino interaction rate. The latter measurement was possible thanks to the extremely low background rate above natural radioactivity, while the first two exploited the superior particle identification capability of the scintillator and an efficient cosmogenic background subtraction. All measurements benefit from an extensive calibration campaign with radioactive sources that preserved scintillator radio-purity.

In this paper we have described the sources of background and the data analysis methods that led to the published solar neutrinos results. We also reported, for the first time, the detection of the annual modulation of the  $^7\text{Be}$  solar neutrino rate, consistent with their solar origin. The implications of Borexino solar neutrino results for neutrino and solar physics were also discussed, both stand-alone and in combination with other solar neutrino data.

Additional important scientific results (not discussed in this paper) were the detection of geo-neutrinos [56] and state-of-the-art upper limits on many rare and exotic processes [99].

Borexino has performed several purification cycles in 2010 and 2011 by means of water extraction [26] in batch mode, reducing even further several background components, among which  $^{85}\text{Kr}$ ,  $^{210}\text{Bi}$ , and the  $^{238}\text{U}$  and  $^{232}\text{Th}$  chains. After these purification cycles, the Borexino Phase-II has started at the beginning of 2012, with the goal of improving all solar neutrino measurements. Borexino is also an ideal apparatus to look for short baseline neutrino oscillations into sterile species using strong artificial neutrino and anti-neutrino sources [100]. An experimental program, called SOX (Source Oscillation eXperiment), was approved and it is now in progress.

The Borexino program is made possible by funding from INFN (Italy), NSF (USA), BMBF, DFG and MPG (Germany), NRC Kurchatov Institute (Russia) and NCN (Poland). We acknowledge the generous support of the Laboratory Nazionali del Gran Sasso (Italy).

- 
- [1] J. Bahcall home page:  
<http://www.sns.ias.edu/~jnb/SNdata/>
  - [2] A.M. Serenelli, W.C. Haxton, and C. Peña-Garay, *Astrophys. J.* **743** (2011) 24.
  - [3] W. Hampel et al. (GALLEX Collaboration), *Phys. Lett. B* **447** (1999) 127; M. Altmann et al. (GNO Collaboration), *Phys. Lett. B* **616** (2005) 174; F. Kaether et al. (GALLEX Collaboration), *Phys. Lett. B* **685** (2010) 47.
  - [4] J. Abdurashitov et al. (SAGE Collaboration), *Phys. Rev. C* **80** (2009) 015807.
  - [5] C. Arpesella et al. (Borexino Collaboration), *Phys. Lett. B* **658** (2008) 101.
  - [6] C. Arpesella et al. (Borexino Collaboration), *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **101** (2008) 091302.
  - [7] G. Bellini et al. (Borexino Collaboration), *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **107** (2011) 141302.
  - [8] G. Bellini et al. (Borexino Collaboration), *Phys. Lett. B* **707** (2012) 22.
  - [9] G. Bellini et al. (Borexino Collaboration), *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **108** (2012) 051302.
  - [10] G. Bellini et al. (Borexino Collaboration), *Phys. Rev. D* **82** (2010) 033006.
  - [11] Q.R. Ahmad et al. (SNO Collaboration), *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **89** (2002) 011301;

- [12] K. Eguchi et al. (KamLAND Collaboration), Phys. Rev. Lett. **90** (2003) 021802; Y. Ashie et al. (Super-Kamiokande Collaboration), Phys. Rev. Lett. **93** (2004) 101801.
- [13] S.P. Mikheyev and A.Yu. Smirnov, Sov. J. Nucl. Phys. **42** (1985) 913; L. Wolfenstein, Phys. Rev. D **17** (1978) 2369.
- [14] J. Bouchez et al., Z. Phys. C **32** (1986) 499; M. Cribier et al., Phys. Lett. B **182** (1986) 89. A.J. Baltz and J. Weneser, Phys. Rev. D **35** (1987) 528; J.N. Bahcall et al., J. High Energy Phys. **0204** (2002) 007; J.N. Bahcall and P.I. Krastev, Phys. Rev. C **56** (1997) 2839;
- [15] A. Renshaw et al., (Super-Kamiokande Collaboration), Phys. Rev. Lett. **112** 091805 (2014).
- [16] J. Beringer et al. (Particle Data Group), The Review of Particle Physics, Phys. Rev. D **86** (2012) 010001 and 2013 partial update for the 2014 edition.
- [17] F. An et al. (Daya Bay Collaboration), Phys. Rev. Lett. **108** (2012) 171803.
- [18] A. Friedland et al., Phys. Lett. B **594** (2004) 347; S. Davidson et al., J. High Energy Phys. **03** (2003) 011; P. C. de Holanda and A.Yu. Smirnov, Phys. Rev. D **69** (2004) 113002; A. Palazzo and J.W.F. Valle, Phys. Rev. D **80** (2009) 091301.
- [19] M. Asplund et al., Astrophys. J. Lett. **705** (2009) L123.
- [20] G. Allimonti et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **600** (2009) 568.
- [21] M. Chen et al., Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **420** (1999) 189.
- [22] F. Gatti et al., Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **370** (1996) 609.
- [23] F. Elisei et al., Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **400** (1997) 53.
- [24] J. Benziger et al., Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **582** (2007) 509.
- [25] G. Bellini et al. (Borexino Collaboration), JINST **6** (2011) P05005.
- [26] G. Allimonti et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **609** (2009) 58.
- [27] H.O. Back et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Phys. Lett. B **525** (2002) 29.
- [28] G.H.O. Back et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Phys. Lett. B **563** (2003) 23.
- [29] H.O. Back et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Phys. Lett. B **563** (2003) 35.
- [30] M. Balata et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Eur. Phys. J. C **47** (2006) 21.
- [31] G. Bellini et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Eur. Phys. J. C **54** (2008) 61.
- [32] H.O. Back et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **584** (2008) 98.
- [33] H.O. Back et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **585** (2008) 48.
- [34] H. Back et al. (Borexino Collaboration), JINST **7** 10 (2012) P10018.
- [35] J.N. Bahcall, M. Kamionkowski, and A. Sirlin, Phys. Rev. D **51** (1995) 6146.
- [36] K. Nakamura et al. (Particle Data Group), The Review of Particle Physics, J. Phys. G. **37** (2010) 075021.
- [37] P. Langacker and J. Erler, private communication.
- [38] W. Winter et al., Phys. Rev. C **73** (2006) 025503.
- [39] P.C. de Holanda, Wei Liao, and A.Yu. Smirnov, Nucl. Phys. B **702** (2004) 307-332.
- [40] S. Fukuda et al. (Super-Kamiokande Collaboration), Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **501** (2003) 418; J. Boger et al. (SNO Collaboration) Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **449** (2000) 172.
- [41] V. Lagomarsino and G. Testera, Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **430** (1999) 435.
- [42] F. Gatti et al., Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **461** (2001) 474.
- [43] G. Allimonti et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **440** (2000) 360.
- [44] G. Bellini et al. (Borexino Collaboration), JCAP **1308** (2103) 049.
- [45] J.B. Birks, The Theory and Practice of Scintillation Counting, Macmillan, New York, 1964.
- [46] M.N. Peron and P. Cassette, Bulletin du BNM **105** (1996) 34.
- [47] I.E. Tamm and I.M. Frank, Doklady AN SSSR **14** (1937) 109; I.E. Tamm, J. Phys. USSR **1** (1939) 439.
- [48] G. Ranucci et al., Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **412** (1998) 374.
- [49] C. Arpesella et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Astropart. Phys. **18** (2002) 1.
- [50] G. Allimonti et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Phys. Lett. B **422** (1998) 349.
- [51] J. Benziger et al., Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **587** (2008) 277.
- [52] G. Zuzel et al., Applied Radiation and Isotopes, **61** (2004) 197.
- [53] National Institute of Standards and Technology. TRC Tables-Hydrocarbons. U.S. Dept. of Commerce, Technology Administration, 2000.
- [54] H. Back et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Phys. Rev. C **74** (2006) 045805.
- [55] S. Abe et al. (KamLAND Collaboration), Phys. Rev. C **81** (2010) 025807.
- [56] G. Bellini et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Phys. Lett. B **687** (2010) 299; G. Bellini et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Phys. Lett. B **722** (2013) 295.
- [57] E. Gatti and F. De Martini, Nuclear Electronics **2** (1962) 265.
- [58] E. Gatti et al., Energia Nucleare **17** (1970) 34, <http://www-3.unipv.it/donati/papers/6d.pdf>.
- [59] H. O. Back et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **584** (2008) 98.
- [60] H. Back et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Phys. Rev. C **74** (2006) 045805.
- [61] D. Franco, G. Consolati, and D. Trezzi, Phys. Rev. C **83** (2011) 015504 .
- [62] W. Heitler "The quantum theory of Radiation" (Dover Books on Physics) (2003).
- [63] A. Grau Malonda et al., Applied Radiation and Isotopes **51** (1999) 183.
- [64] O. Yu. Smirnov, Instruments and Experimental Techniques **45** (2002) 363.
- [65] Geant4, Physics reference manual, <http://geant4.web.cern.ch/geant4/UserDocumentation/>
- [66] K.S. Hirata et al. (Kamiokande Collaboration), Phys. Rev. Lett. **63** (1989) 16; J. Hosaka et al., (Super-Kamiokande Collaboration), Phys. Rev. D **73** (2006) 112001.
- [67] B. Ahrarmin et al.,(SNO Collaboration) Phys. Rev. D. **72** 052010 (2005).
- [68] J.P. Cravens et al.,(Super-Kamiokande Collaboration) Phys. Rev. D. **78** 032002 (2008).
- [69] N. R. Lomb, Astrophysics and Space Science **39** (1976) 447.
- [70] J. D. Scargle, Astrophys. J. **263** (1982) 835.



- [71] N.E. Huang et al., Proc. R. Soc. Lond. A **454** (1998) 903.
- [72] G. Wang et al., Advances in Adaptive Data Analysis **2** (2010) 277.
- [73] Gang Wang et al., Advances in Adaptive Data Analysis **2** (2010) 277.
- [74] G. Rilling et al., Proceedings of IEEE-EURASIP Workshop on Nonlinear Signal and Image Processing NSIP-03, Grado (Italy), June 2003.
- [75] P. Flandrin et al., P. IEEE Signal Processing Letters **11** (2) (2003) 112114.
- [76] Z. Wu and N.E. Huang, Proc. R. Soc. Lond. A. **460** (2004) 1597.
- [77] Z. Wu and N.E. Huang, Advances in Adaptive Data Analysis **2** (2010) 397.
- [78] W. Huang et al., Advances in Adaptive Data Analysis Vol. **1** (2) (2009) 177.
- [79] E. Plassmann and L. Langer, Phys. Rev. **96** (1954) 1593.
- [80] H. Daniel, Nucl. Phys. **31** (1962) 293.
- [81] A. Grau Carles, Nucl. Instrum. Methods Phys. Res. A **551** (2005) 312.
- [82] A. Grau Carles and A. Grau Malonda, Nucl. Phys. A **596** (1996) 83.
- [83] T.K. Kuo and J. Pantaleone, Phys. Rev. D **35** (1987) 3432.
- [84] G.L. Fogli, E. Lisi, and D. Montanino, Phys. Rev. D **49** (1994) 3626.
- [85] M.C. Gonzalez-Garcia and C. Peña-Garay, Nucl. Phys. B (Proc. Supp.) **91** (2001) 80.
- [86] A. Dziewonski and D. Anderson, Physics of the Earth and Planetary Interiors **25** (1981) 297.
- [87] J.N. Bahcall, A. Serenelli, and S. Basu S, Astrophys. J. Supp. **165** (2006) 400.
- [88] B. Cleveland et al. (Homestake Collaboration), Astrophys. J. **496** (1998) 505.
- [89] B. Aharmim et al. (SNO Collaboration), Phys. Rev. Lett. **101** (2008) 111301.
- [90] B. Aharmim et al. (SNO Collaboration), Phys. Rev. C **81** (2010) 055504.
- [91] J. Hosaka et al. (Super-Kamiokande Collaboration), Phys. Rev. D **73** (2006) 112001.
- [92] K. Abe et al. (Super-Kamiokande Collaboration), Phys. Rev. D **83** (2011) 052010 .
- [93] A. Gando et al. (KamLAND Collaboration), Phys. Rev. D **83** (2011) 052002.
- [94] J.N. Bahcall, Phys. Rev. C **65** (2002) 025801.
- [95] J.N. Bahcall and C. Peña-Garay, J. High Energy Phys. **11** (2010) 004.
- [96] J. Ahn et al. (RENO Collaboration), Phys. Rev. Lett. **108** (2012) 191802.
- [97] J.N. Bahcall et al., New Journ. of Physics **6** (2004) 63.
- [98] J.N. Bahcall et al., Astrophys. J. Suppl. Series **165** (2006) 400.
- [99] G. Bellini et al. (Borexino Collaboration), Phys. Rev. D **85** (2012) 092003; G. Bellini et al. (Borexino Collaboration) Phys. Rev. C **81** (2010) 034317.
- [100] G. Bellini et al. (Borexino Collaboration), J. High Energy Phys. **8** (2013) 038.